# Illusion

Yoonworks

STORYPDF

Complete English text · A4 reading edition

# Contents


Chapter 1 6

Chapter 2 9

Chapter 3 11

Chapter 4 16

Chapter 5 19

Chapter 6 23

Chapter 7 25

Chapter 8 28

Chapter 9 31

Chapter 10 35

Chapter 11 39

Chapter 12 43

Chapter 13 48

Chapter 14 52

Chapter 15 55

Chapter 16 60

Chapter 17 66

Chapter 18 71

Chapter 19 75

Chapter 20 80

Chapter 21 84

Chapter 22 90

Chapter 23 93

Chapter 24 98

Chapter 25 105

Chapter 26 111

Chapter 27 116

Chapter 28 119

Chapter 29 123

Chapter 30 127

Chapter 31 132

Chapter 32 136

Chapter 33 140

Chapter 34 144

Chapter 35 149

Chapter 36 156

Chapter 37 159

Chapter 38 162

Chapter 39 166

Chapter 40 169

Chapter 41 172

Chapter 42 175

Chapter 43 178

Chapter 44 181

Chapter 45 184

Chapter 46 188

Chapter 47 192

Chapter 48 197

Chapter 49 199

Chapter 50 201

Chapter 51 204

Chapter 52 207

Chapter 53 210

Chapter 54 213

Chapter 55 216

Chapter 56 220

Chapter 57 223

Chapter 58 227

Chapter 59 230

Chapter 60 233

Chapter 61 237

Chapter 62 - End 240

Chapter Epilogue 244

# About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / Illusion.

Reading edition: 2026-10-29. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

# Chapter 1

**Jessie's POV**

I woke up from the continuous knocking on the door and my doorbell ringing.

I yawn and looked on the side table where the clock was.

*What the heck. Who in their right mind is on my door at 7 in the morning?*

I covered my head with another pillow determine to continue what I was doing before someone came and decided to pester the life out of me.

Unlucky for me, the person outside the door seems to determine to wake me up.

I lazily pull out the blanket out of me and sat on my bed. Whoever it is outside can wait the day out and kiss their ass.

Another knock.

"Aissst!!!"

But I decided otherwise because I can't sleep anyways with the continues knocking and bell ringing, it's hurting her ears.

"I swear, whoever this person is, I'm going to get a life this early in the morning."

I can't help but yelp out another yawn. My eyes still close and no doubt, a few more second would be enough to drag me back to sleep.

The bell still rings. This time, the person outside seems to put their bloody fingers permanently on it.

*Aaaaaahhhhhh!*

I angrily stood up and walk to my front door, stomping my feet.

This is one of those times where I regret ever being alone and no one would do these things for me.

Yes, I live alone. I don't have a family because I was an orphan but I can't say I don't have someone because I have my adoptive father. But two years ago, I decided to live away from him so I can be independent.

Honestly, I don't even have the energy to stand up as I'm still tired from all the part-time jobs that I'm had had these past few weeks, and of course, due to lack of sleep.

Looking like a zombie who just stood up from her grave, I marched groggily on my way to the door, my long grey hair is a mess, not even caring if there's a mark of drool visible on my face.

I did not even bother to cover myself. I'm wearing a spaghetti strap blouse and black shorts.

*What? I was sleeping, okay?*

Without checking who the person is through the peephole, I angrily swung the door open only to be greeted by three men, one is someone I'm too familiar with while the other two are someone almost her age.

"PD-nim?" her jaws dropped on the floor when I realized who my visitors were.

"Are you not going to let us in?" the older guy said while looking at her questioningly, while the other two looked away surprise on how she looks.

"Ne, come in." I gestured them to come in and opened the door widely so they can enter.

After realizing what I was wearing, I immediately run my way to my room to wear a pair of loose pants and a sweatshirt.

After checking my reflection on the mirror, I made my way to the bathroom to rinse my face. I did not bother to fix my hair because I'm not really comfortable showing my face to people.

Once she's sure she looked decent enough, she went back to the living room and faced her father and visitors who are busy checking out the place.

"I'm sorry, do you need anything? water, juice, coffee?" I asked in embarrassment, my face glued to the ground.

To be honest, I have problems looking people in the eyes especially if I'm not familiar with them. A problem I always had even before my stepfather adopted me.

I had a hard childhood. I never knew who my parents were then one day, Choi PD showed up and adopted me. It turns out that one of the facilitator from the orphanage is his relative and had told things about me to Choi PD. And the rest is history.

Even though my stepfather tried his best to give everything to me, I was never comfortable being with a lot of people.

Now, I live my life diminishing my presence to the people around me. I wear a cap and a face mask whenever I go out. I was home schooled.

The part-time jobs that I have are all from inside my stepfather's company. But don't worry, the things that I do doesn't require me to mingle with a lot of people.

You see, my adoptive father is Choi PD of Healing Heart Entertainment. But of course, nobody really knew about me and I prefer it to stay like that. Besides, I only call him Dad when we're alone.

"It's fine. I came here to tell you that you don't need to go to the office from now on." I looked at him in confusion, still avoiding the eyes of the two people behind him.

"These guys will be staying beside your unit and I want you to take care of them."

My attention was taken by the two boys who immediately greeted me after I looked into them.

"Hello, we're VOELEVARD boys!" two of them greeted and I almost jumped in surprise.

"I'm Rome, the leader of the group."

"And I'm Josh, the oldest and most handsome." then he gave me a wink. I bowed my head in surprise. I can only hear my stepfather chuckle perhaps, already used with the playfulness of the guy.

"Don't worry, these seven boys are well-behaved. I'm sure you're safe to stay with them. I decided not to hire another person because I can't trust people nowadays."

"PD-nim..." my voice sounded weak that it almost came out as a whisper.

"Well, sorry to disturb your sleep. We'll go. I'll drop by another time"

I just stared on the floor and nodded, still unable to comprehend what is happening. I lead them back to the door and before my stepdad go, he looked back and tapped my shoulder.

"Take a rest." he said.

Though my stepdad is not very showy, I know that he cares about me. He understands me and I really appreciate him a lot. I just nodded and I had to bow my head when that Josh guy gave me wink.

"Ow!" he exclaimed as Rome hit him on the shoulder.

"Let's go." My father closed the door for me, noticing that I'm still out of myself.

After five long minutes, I looked up and closed my eyes.

Did he just said I need to take care of seven boys? Like, seven grown up boys?

I mentally face-palmed myself.

This will be hard.

---

# Chapter 2

**Yohan's POV**

"Guys, make sure to be nice to the girl next door. She will be taking care of our needs while we stay here." I heard Rome say to all of us.

I adjusted my body until I get comfortable in the couch.

Yes, I'm about to sleep.

We just came to our new dorm. Something weird happened and our old dorm had been invaded by some obsessive fans.

Choi PD had been furious so he decided to let us move to a new place temporarily. That is, if they still think that we are still safe in our old dorm.

Our new dorm is quite big by the way. I checked the rooms earlier and we actually have five rooms so only two rooms will be occupied by two people and the rest will have their own.

It doesn't matter to be honest because the boys sleep wherever. And I don't mind either way, as long as I can sleep comfortably, I'll be fine with that.

"I bet she's old and ugly." I heard Vash snickered.

"I don't think so," Josh hyung replied. "We were not really able to see her face well because her face is always glued on the ground but I don't think she's ugly, plus I think she's just around our age."

"Right, I initially though that she doesn't like us but I noticed that she seemed to be uncomfortable due to our presence." Rome added.

"Why? maybe she saw your faces and got shocked!" Jason burst out laughing and I'm sure it was Jake that he had high-fived with, typical of the two.

I smiled a little as I listen to their banters, my left arm covering my eyes.

The light is to bright.

"Yah, Josh hyung actually tried to flirt with her but I think she thought Josh hyung was weird."

"Yah, Rome!" Josh hyung protested. "Nobody can resist my handsome face okay!"

I may have covered my eyes but I'm sure Josh did his signature flying kiss move as everyone started laughing.

"Or maybe she's a fan and she was shy that's why she acted like that?"

"Jake may be right." Vash agreed. "But I hope she isn't because I won' be comfortable if she's another obsessive fan." he shivered, perhaps remembering the scenario when we found the state of our old dorm.

I felt someone sat on the empty space just above my head. I think it's Rome. "I think she can be trusted. Besides, Choi PD personally know her."

"Really?" Jason asked a little interested.

"Ne. And I heard Choi PD say that she no longer need to work at the company. Yah, Josh hyung, have you seen her ever at the office?"

"No." Josh shrugged.

"If she's not an obsessive fan, I'll seduce her and make her my girlfriend." Jason shouted while dancing playfully.

"No!" Jake object. "She's mine."

"Ah why? She'll be mine!" Vash added and the three of them started hitting each other with a throw pillow!

A sigh escaped on my lips. So much for a good sleep, huh?

I removed my arm on my face and decided to sit down.

"You are all so noisy." I shouted getting the attention of the three. Haiden is almost on the verge of joining. Another kid, oh God.

"Have you unpacked already? You don't want that girl to see your underwear right?" I asked them with a smirk.

"Oh my God!" Jason panicked then run to his room with Jake and Vash following.

"At least mine aren't in a bacon state." Josh snickered.

"Ge'ez. Whatever." I said then I went back to sleeping. I think I'm getting a head ache.

==========

# Chapter 3

**Jessie's POV**

The sound of the loud and continues knocking on my door woke me up. *What's with people always knocking on my door?*

I grunt. *Why can't I have a good sleep for Pete's sake?*

I sat on my bed and throw my blanket on the side. I stood up and slowly made my way to the door, this time, wearing decent clothes. I shivered when I remembered how those guys looked shocked last time. I bet they were disgusted on how I look.

Can't blame them actually. I'm never a person who takes time to make myself presentable to people. They won't notice me anyways, plus, I hate getting attention.

Realizing my mistakes from last time, I carefully checked who the person knocking first through the peephole. My feet automatically stepped backwards when I realized that they were the boys on the other unit.

*Why are they here?*

I mentally scolded myself when I remember that I'm like their helper. I sighed.

I'm not really sure if I can handle this. I might scare the boys.

Of course, I know them. I'm Choi PD's stepdaughter after all. Plus, I sometimes work in the office and their face are all plastered on the walls. They are like, the pride of Healing Heart Entertainment right now.

The knocking on the door stopped and I heard someone speak, "Yah, maybe she's out."

"Jake is right, Rome hyung. Let's go."

I took a deep breath. Let's get this over with.

My hands slowly went and twist the doorknob. I opened the door slightly, enough for my head to be visible.

The boys must have been startled as they stared at me with shocked face.

"Hello." I said shyly. Again, my eyes glued on the floor. My long gray hair covering some part of my face.

"Hello!" They shouted in unison.

I just nod in response.

"What's your name by the way, dear?" My face blushed as Rome asked for my name.

I cleared my throat. "Hye- Ahhmm, my name is Jessie."

"Hi Jessie! I'm Jason. Nice to meet you."

My eyes searched for the person who greeted me and saw a guy with a pink hair smiling at me.

"I'm Jake. Are you my noona?"

"I'm Vash Oppa!"

"No. You're not her Oppa. I am!" Josh argued.

"Hello Jessie. I'm your Hope, I'm Haiden."

They were all waving at me.

"Ah, ne." I said then looked at their shoes.

*Great. What a good way to show them how creepy you are.* I said to myself.

"Ah, do you need anything?" I asked them, this time, I tried my best to look at them, smiling awkwardly.

"Ow, yes!" Rome replied. "We're going out. We just want to ask if you can cook for us later, that is, if you know how to cook?"

"I do."

"Great. We'll be back after four hours or so. Here's your key by the way" I accepted the key that he gave.

"Okay. Thanks"

"Bye Jessie!"

"Bye Miss Jessie!"

"See you later!"

They all said in unison.

I watch them as they all went to the elevator, Jason on Jake's back while Vash is trying to do the same to Haiden. Josh was trying to tell them to stop.

Once they rode the elevator, I got startled when they looked at me and waved goodbye until it closes.

*What a bunch of weird guys.*

I then looked at the door across mine.

What have I gotten myself into?

After I showered and changed my clothes, I went to their unit. A deep sigh escaped my lips then I entered the key to the keyhole and slowly opened the door.

Their unit is pretty much like mine but bigger. I used to stay on this unit before I asked my stepdad if I can just use the other one. I don't like being alone in a very big place. I feel empty.

"I guess they all went out." I said to myself and relaxed a little. My feet made its way to the kitchen. Perks of being familiar with the place.

I opened the refrigerator and saw some vegetables inside. On the freezer are grounded meat.

I opened the cupboard to check other stuffs.

At least I can cook chicken stew.

I clasped my hands on my chest. "Okay, let's start before they come back."

I started washing the veggies. I chopped the onions, my eyes watered a little.

I washed my hands after I put everything on the pot. I just need to wait for it to be cooked. The rice is almost cooked as well.

While waiting, I decided to go to the living room. It's obvious that a bunch of guys are living in the house because its messy.

Some of their clothes are scattered on the couch.

Since it's my job anyways, I decided to start cleaning a little. I grabbed all the clothes and put it in the basket in the laundry room. I arranged the figurines as well.

Once I'm sure everything's in order, I went back to the kitchen and checked my stew.

Satisfied with the taste, I turned off the stove.

I was about to go out when my attention feels on the piano on the corner.

My feet acted on its own and the next thing I know, I was sitting on the chair, my fingers at the top of the piano.

I used to play a lot with the piano when I live here. When I moved to the other unit, my stepdad bought me a new one.

Music is my only escape. Whenever I'm sad, I play the piano.

I listen to music whenever I feel like the world is being unfair...

Whenever I feel like life itself has given up on me...

When I remember how I was left alone...

When I know that I'm not okay, that I'm alone...

When I feel like I want to give up...

My fingers automatically started playing.

I started playing that famous song I keep singing lately. And then I closed my eyes then started to sing.

**Can someone tell me who I am?**

**Who I was or who I am supposed to be?**

**Ever since that night, I have forgotten**

**I was lost, all alone, so afraid…**

**I know everything is my fault, it was a mistake**

**But I never knew all these things will take away**

**Every bits that's left in me,**

**Every pain was left to stay, I was left to bear**

**Why? Just why? Why can't you tell me what I did wrong?**

I let myself get carried away with the music, my eyes still closed.

**Do you remember when we were young?**

**When I was all alone and then you came?**

**You touch my hand, you smiled at me**

**You told me you'll stay**

**I know everything is my fault, it was a mistake**

**But I never knew all these things will take away**

**Do you remember when we were young?**

**When I was all alone and then you came?**

**You touch my hand, you smiled at me**

**You told me you'll stay**

My eyes started to water, I can feel my tears slowly flowing down my cheeks.

**I've been thinking about all the things I did**

**Why you left and never stayed**

**Do you remember when we were young?**

**When I was all alone and then you came?**

**You touch my hand, you smiled at me**

**You told me you'll stay**

**Why didn't you stay, left me alone?**

**Come back to me…**

I sighed. It has been what? I don't even remember the last time I cried.

I wiped the tears away on my cheeks. My eyes caught the Music sheet in front of the piano.

I decided to play some notes. "Not bad." I told to myself.

Then I started to be a little playful on it and add some other notes to it. I started to smile. I was so lost to what I was doing that I was startled when someone shouted.

"What do you think are you doing?"

Startled, I looked back to see someone lying down behind the couch, his eyes still adjusting with the light.

I quickly stood up. "I'm sorry, I didn't know someone is here." I said as I bow down to apologize.

I notice his feet just a few steps away from me.

He angrily took the music sheets on the piano.

"Who told you to look at my things?" He shouted.

I clenched my hands on my chest, afraid. "Sorry. I'm sorry." My voice cracking. I can already feel my body trembling in fear.

Just then, the front door opened and the other boys came.

"Get out." He said.

I can't move.

"I said get out!" He shouted.

I quickly run to the door ignoring the calls of the other boys.

My tears started falling down my cheeks.

---

# Chapter 4

**Yohan's POV**

"Hyung!"

"What happened?"

"Are you okay?"

The boys all asked in unison as they went near me. I sighed.

I sat on the couch near me.

*You had to be so stupid Yohan.*

I felt the boys sat beside, worried look all written on their faces.

The boys decided to go out as they need to do something at the office. I would come along but my head really hurts earlier so I decided to stay.

The light is burning my eyes so I went and lie down behind the couch.

I was sleeping peacefully when I heard someone started playing piano.

To say that I was startled was an understatement. I'm sure it isn't one of the boys because the person was playing really well, plus it was a sad song.

I removed my left arm on my eyes and decided to look at the corner where the piano was located.

Then I saw a girl.

Her long grey hair falls behind her back.

After playing sometime, she then started to sing.

**Can someone tell me who I am?**

**Who I was or who I am supposed to be?**

**Ever since that night, I have forgotten**

**I was lost, all alone, so afraid…**

I closed my eyes as I listened to her soothing voice.

Her voice.

It was so sad, so lonely.

It was heartbreaking, like she's breaking into little pieces.

**I know everything is my fault, it was a mistake**

**But I never knew all these things will take away**

Why do I feel like she's crying? Her voice started to shake but it's still beautiful.

She sang a little more.

**Every bits that's left in me,**

**Every pain was left to stay, I was left to bear**

**Why? Just why? Why can't you tell me what I did wrong?**

She's lonely.

It feels like she was left alone.

My heart aches a little. Why was I getting affected? *It was just a stupid song.*

**Do you remember when we were young?**

**When I was all alone and then you came?**

**You touch my hand, you smiled at me**

**You told me you'll stay**

Each phrase she delivers with such emotion it's as if, it's also breaking my heart.

*Ge'ez, Yohan. You're a hiphop artist.*

**Why didn't you stay, left me alone?**

**Come back to me…**

She ended the song, then started sobbing softly.

Why do I feel like I wanted to touch her and tell her it's fine?

*"Fuck."* I muttered to myself.

Why does she have to cry? *And why does it hurt to see here cry anyways?*

I can see from the corner of my eyes how she started wiping the tears away from her eyes.

She seems delicate. I wonder how she was able to immerse herself in the song.

After staring blankly in front of her, I saw her suddenly getting the Music sheet at the top of the piano.

My eyebrows furrowed.

She then starting playing slowly.

It was my song. The song I wrote for *her.*

*Shit.*

Before I realize, she started adding some other melody on it making it a little better.

*Fuck, No.* Not that song.

My inside started to boil and before I knew it, I shouted at her breaking her into her little trance.

"What do you think are you doing?"

I saw how she startled she had been. For a moment, I regret shouting at her.

She quickly stood up in front of the piano. "I'm sorry, I didn't know someone is here." she said as she bows down to apologize.

I was able to make out her face before her air dropped and cover her face, her vision glued on the ground.

But then my catches the Music sheet still on the piano.

I angrily went and grabbed it. "Who told you to look at my things?" I can't help it but my voice still a little louder than usual.

I saw her flinched.

I watch as she clenched her hands on her chest, afraid. "Sorry. I'm sorry." her voice cracked and her body started trembling I almost wanted to touch her and ask her to calm down.

And then the boys came.

"Get out." I calmly told her but she didn't move.

"I said get out!" I screamed and she quickly run to the door ignoring the calls of the boys.

Before she run, I had a glimpse of her face. *Great. You're fucked up Yohan.*

I suddenly felt so guilty.

I guess I need to apologize right?

---

# Chapter 5

**Jessie's POV**

I slammed the door shut and run until I reach the couch. Instead of sitting on it, my body slip its way down to the ground like every other day, hugging my knees on the process.

Why do people hate me?

Why does everyone hate my presence, my existence?

Of course, that's how it's always is anyways.

He got mad because I did something wrong. Or maybe just my mere presence irked him.

Will it be better if I die?

I cried harder with my knees covering my eyes.

No one cares.

She painfully smirked.

I can die on this stupid apartment and no one will know.

Well, her stepdad maybe but when? After a month?

She threw the pillow behind her.

Unintentionally, a small smirk went out of her lips.

Never once she blames her stepdad about everything that had happened on her life.

It's not his fault that her parents left her when she was five.

It was hers.

Maybe because I was too ugly.

Or maybe I bring bad luck.

Whatever it is, it's all because of me.

So it's definitely not my stepdad's fault that she's alone and she's afraid to be with people. If not, he'd given me a house, clothes, food and education.

Of course, she was thankful but she's not happy.

Why? Because she needs comfort, love, safety, guidance.

She needs home.

She wants a family.

Yes, family... Something that's impossible for her to have.

To be honest, she's so thankful for everything that her stepdad had given her, but she knows that he did it because he needed something for her. The good side? She gets to live her life the way she wanted.

She has freedom regardless how broken she feels; how empty she feels inside.

Maybe that's her destiny. That's what she always thought.

She's destined to be alone, to live like she isn't existing.

She's a nobody anyway.

She looked up to the ceiling, tears still streaming down her cheeks.

She's so used to this scenario.

She remembered on her third grade, her schoolmates would always bully her for being an orphan.

She'd go home so upset but no one cared.

During sixth grade, her classmates locked her up on a storage room and nobody noticed.

She almost died due to the cold. She wished that she did but no.

She was able to come out the next day when the caretaker opened it.

I cried a lot. I feel like I'm dying but no one knew, not even my stepdad. I didn't even bother telling him.

Nobody noticed that I wasn't home anyways. What's the use of telling other people? It's not like they would do something about it.

During middle school, my classmates threw all of my things on the toilet. I didn't tell a soul.

Somehow, I got used to it.

It was before I graduated from middle school when one of my classmates decided that it's fun to cut my wrist with a knife.

Too bad, I didn't die but I wish I did.

My teacher found out about it and I was sent to the hospital. They thought I tried to kill myself. I didn't even correct them. What's the point anyways?

That's when my stepdad decided that I get home schooled moving forward. I'm not sure how but it seems the he knew there was something going on at school.

He talked to me about. That, I appreciate but I was stone-cold those days. I would basically blackout people.

She closed her eyes.

Just one soul...

"I wish there would at least be one person who would be lonely when I'm gone..."

But that's a little impossible.

---

**Yohan's POV**

He mess his hair with his right hand.

Great. So basically, Josh hyung decided that I should go and apologize to that girl because obviously, I was stupid.

I don't want to but heck, he kicked me out of the unit. He's older so I can't just smack his head.

I don't even know her name or I know I had a brief glimpse on her face but I was too angry that I wasn't paying any attention.

Come to think of it. She was so busy staring at the ground I was not even given a chance to take a good glance on her face.

Is she ugly or something? Not that I cared anyways. I'm not a person to judge people by their looks. I'm not even a looker myself.

I sigh. I walked closer to her unit and stopped just right outside of her door, contemplating if I should knock or ring her doorbell instead.

I knew I was a little mean earlier but hey, I just woke up and I was having a little headache. And she was messing with my things anyway.

And my song, she was playing it. She shouldn't have. It was for her.

I raised my right hand to aim for a knock but once my knuckles made contact with the door frame, it screeched a little and opened.

She forgot to close her door properly.

I put a mental note to remind her about it. What if she accidentally forgot to close our door as well?

God knows when our obsessive fans would find our new place as well. Though the security on the lobby was pretty much strict, we don't really now, right?

After mentally arguing with myself if I should call her or just enter the damn room, I decided to do the second after I realized that I don't know her name anyways.

Once I pushed the door, I noticed how the room was so dark. Not a single light was opened.

Her surroundings were so... Dark? Lonely?

My heart breaks a little when I remembered how she cried earlier.

Is she all alone?

Her room was covered with silence.

She did not do anything stupid, right?

I got nervous a little. Though a little skeptical about entering her room without permission, I decided to still do because I'm afraid she's done something she shouldn't have.

I checked her living room, throw pillows were all scattered on the floor. But it's a good sign that there aren't any broken things around. I guess I was just being paranoid.

A sigh came out of my lips.

Why do I care anyways? I don't even know her.

I was kept out of my little trance when I heard a scream from inside the room on my right, then a sound of something hitting the surface soon followed.

My feet ran into that direction without even thinking and I immediately opened the door.

Then I saw her lying on the floor, passed out, motionless.

He gulped.

Shit. She's half-naked, on just her black bra. Thank God, she's wearing shorts.

I got a good look on her face, then my body stiffened.

"Jenna... " I whispered.

---

# Chapter 6

**Jessie's POV**

"Awwww" my hands automatically covered my eyes when a streamed of light blinded before me.

It took a while before I was able to adjust myself to the light. After a few seconds, my eyes wandered on my surroundings, white ceiling, reeks of antibiotics.

"Hospital... " I said to my said. It wasn't even a question nor a confirmation. It's obvious that she was on a hospital.

It's not like it's her first time.

Then I closed my eyes. "Why am I here anyways?"

I checked my wrist immediately to see if I tried to do something stupid again.

You see, I tried to kill myself before but someone saw me so I was sent to the hospital. My stepdad was a little disappointed so I decided not to do it anymore. I even stopped hurting myself. But, the self-pitying, well, I still do it from time to time.

This was an improvement actually. When she was younger, she remembers visiting the hospital twice a month due to various reasons.

I used to attend therapy sessions. I guess it lasted for a year. I told my stepdad that I no longer need it since I'm staying at home anyways. You know, being home schooled and all.

When I started going to the office, only a few people knew why I was there and I only visit the company for like few hours, purposely avoiding a lot of people.

I heard the door opened and saw a doctor came in and a guy I'm not familiar with.

"Miss Jessie, good thing you're already awake" the doctor was too cheerful I had to stop the urge from cringing due to her voice.

"Yes. Ahm, sorry but, why am I here?" confusion enveloped my eyes.

"Ah, you slipped on your bathroom and sprained your ankle. We just had to check if you had any concussion since we're not sure if you've accidentally hit your head when you fell so you were admitted. The good thing is, you did not so you can go home now." again, she cheerfully informed me.

"Hi Miss Jessie. I'm Manager Song from your father's office and I'm here to take you home." he smiled.

"Ow" I said. Not long after, I was at the back of the car, sitting alongside with all the things scattered inside. This must be the guy's van.

"By the way, your father insisted that you stay on the next unit for the meantime. Your ankle is sprained so you'll need a lot of help."

I internally groaned.

Seeing her stepdad had already decided, she doesn't have the courage to say no.

After Manager Song settled the hospital bill, we went off to our unit which I'm sure is just close to the hospital.

I checked the things around me. I was sitting on the back and I'm hella sure this was the boys van because he can see a lot of man stuffs and all scattered around.

My hand reached to a neck-pillow beside me and decided to wear it in the meantime. I was taken aback when the pillowed made it's contact on my face, it was soft and, yeah, it smells so good.

She then started playing with the string of the black hoodie she was wearing. But then, she had to pause a little, she's wearing a black hoodie which is almost twice as big for her.

And she doesn't remember owning one this big either.

It's funny because all she can remember is how she decided to take a bath after that long hours of crying.

In the midst of putting in her clothes, she remembered that she forgot to close the faucet on her bathroom so she went back only to slip on the wet surface.

Her eyes immediately went wide and her hands instantly covered her mouth when remembered wearing only her short denim shorts and her black bra on top.

"By the way, you should be grateful that Yohan found you."

"Yohan? who was he again?" I must have spoken what was on my mind because I heard a chuckle from in front of me. He must have seen a confusion in my eyes.

"That's Yohan. You can ask the boys later."

*The boys?*

"You mean, one of the boys found me on my unit?" I asked him, my heart hanging from my chest.

I saw him smile and give me a nod.

My eyes shot in horror. *Oh, God. I'm doomed.*

---

# Chapter 7

**Jessie's POV**

So I'm in front of the boy's unit contemplating if I should knock, use the key that Rome had given or just retreat to my own unit.

Manager Song dropped me on the lobby saying something about attending a meeting so he can't accompany me towards the boy's unit.

I just agreed. He doesn't even know that he did me a little favor because I don't think I have the courage to face these boys anytime soon.

Still on my crutches, I decided to turn my back and head back to my unit.

*Yep. this would probably be the best.*

Besides, she's not yet really acquainted with the boys. Aside from knowing their names, she doesn't know anything else. Well, let's disregard the fact that they're some world-famous boyband, you know.

My stepdad won't even know that I'm not with them anyways. We rarely talk nor see each other.

Even if she can't see her reflection, she's pretty sure a blush or crimson red is now visible on her cheeks, when she remembered that someone might have seen her half-naked earlier.

She remembers manager Song telling her that she's actually wearing Yohan's hoodie. That basically means that he may be the one who actually found her.

Also, she has this weird feeling that he's also the one who caught her playing the piano on their unit.

She doesn’t really remember how he looked like because she rarely look at the pictures hanging on the walls of the office but it's funny how they already had a few encounters but she still can't remember how he looks like.

Her heart dropped a little. *I bet he's totally pissed off.*

I mean, he was mad for me intruding, plus, I'm sure I was a bother since he needed me to be sent to the hospital. She doesn't even know how she was brought in, if he called an ambulance or what.

Then, this happened. She need to stay on their unit because she needs help when originally, she should be helping them instead.

*Yep. I'm totally a bother. Why am I so unlucky?*

Before I can even reach my unit, their door shot open and six boys fell downwards, pilling up with each other like a pancake.

"Oh my God!" I almost screamed in panic.

Startled, I focus on them, my eyes started to show confusion.

"Ahm, Hello?" Rome awkwardly greeted still pancaked at the bottom of the human pile.

"We were waiting for you to come in." Haiden shyly admitted, his right hand awkwardly on his neck, the second pancake.

I watch them, dumbfound, as each of them slowly stand up occasionally cursing every time one hit the other.

"Fuck, Vash, No, that's my balls you Alien."

"That's not me Rome hyung"

"Oh my God, sorry, I thought it's Jake's balls... "

"Jason, I swear to God if you don't stop hitting them balls, you won't be seeing the next daylight."

"Why were you trying to hit his balls anyways?" Josh added, still struggling to get up.

I chuckled at the scene before me.

"Oh God!"

I quickly checked and saw Jason pointing at me, shocked look inevitable on his face.

"You just smiled. Oh my god, Oh my God! oh yeah!" he cheerfully exclaimed, jumping up and down like he just won a huge award.

"No shit Sherlock" Rome sarcastically said, "And why do you scream like a girl?"

By now, they are all standing in front of me, the six of them and I still can't stop smiling.

I don't know but I feel like I like these boys.

"Oh my God, my balls" I looked at Rome who's having a hard time standing properly.

"You might want to go and check those balls." He looked at me in horror. "You know, just to make sure you still have two." I said while smiling.

"Fuck you Jason!" he screamed then run inside his unit, probably, to check his balls if it's still in place, while everybody else started laughing so hard.

"Rome, stop with the cursing!" I heard Josh said while he followed the poor leader.

I saw Vash, Jason and Haiden already lying flat, their stomach on the floor, dead laughing.

Then Jake came forward, smiling, "Let's come inside noona. Manager Song told us you'll be staying that's why we were waiting."

I smiled at him and accepted the hand that he's offering while helping me with my crutches. I'm still not used with those.

Once inside, I let my body fall freely on the cushion, while Jake put my crutches aside.

My eyes automatically scan the surroundings. The living room is a mess. I almost forgot that I just cleaned it earlier. Not even sure but my eyes seem to wander, like it was looking for something or someone.

"If you're looking for Yohan hyung, he's probably sleeping on his room." Jake said.

I quickly denied what he said, my arms waving in embarrassment. "No, of course not. Why - Ahmm, Yes, I mean, No! Why would I look for him?" I immediately said.

*Ge'ez. You really had to stutter?* I said to myself.

I then noticed, Jake, Jason, Vash and Haiden smiling meaningfully.

"What?"

Jake sat beside me while the other three decided to roll on the floor, occasionally hitting each other.

*Confirmed. They are indeed a bunch of weirdos.*

---

# Chapter 8

**Jessie's POV**

I was checking on the rooms available because the boys said I get to decide which room I would be staying.

To be honest, I don't really want to impose but I am still glad that they are being considerate about me.

I was never the person who easily mingle with some strangers but I have these feeling that I will be liking these boys.

Of course, this has nothing to do with how they look because yeah, they are totally drop dead gorgeous. That was long established, alright.

Vash, who insisted I call him V, was very funny. He seems to be so warm-hearted. And I'm liking his rectangular-smile.

Jason on the other hand was so playful but it's so funny how he seems to can't keep his hands of Jake who's not even bothered by it.

It's not like they were in a relationship but they were all really close.

Now, Haiden or Haiden was so loud but not irritating. He is so jolly, I'm actually quite jealous. I wish I can be as endearing as him.

Well, Rome was okay. I mean, I met him and Josh, who was a total flirt by the way, before. I feel like Rome is so responsible.

The only person that I was actually dreading to be with was Yohan.

Again, I can't seem to remember how he looks like but it's funny how we had multiple incidents with each other already, both not good by the way.

I opened the door next to the bathroom and was greeted by a very dark room.

The curtains were close and the air condition was open. To be honest, this isn't any different to her room.

I moved closer using my crutches which was pissing me a little coz it's making my underarm a little uncomfortable.

I scanned the room and saw some music sheets on the table. I moved closer and check the notes.

Truth is, I am very much inclined with music. I mean, it brings a lot of emotions within me.

Music isn't just my escape. It's like, it is within me.

Music makes her a whole different person.

Actually, I am a song writer. Most of the songs that Healing Heart Entertainment releases passes through me first. The boys make the melody and lyrics but I do the finishing touch.

But of course, not everybody knew about. Only few people do including my stepdad.

That is actually the main reason why he adopted me in the first place. At a very young age, I started showing interest in music. I was ten when I started making my own songs. Like, making good songs as what my facilitator had told me.

She had my song listened by Choi PD and then the rest was history.

My stepdad made sure I study music at home, at least learn the basics that's what he said because he doesn't want to influence my way of music.

I don't really mind that he adopted me because he needed me. He had been honest in the beginning anyways.

And he gave me everything that I need so who am I to decline?

I put down the music sheet back on the table after remembering what happened last time.

"So, you really have a knack of touching people's thing do you?" my body stiffen when I heard a familiar voice behind me.

I did not even try to move as I feel him walk closer to me, my hands getting tense.

"I'm sorry. They told me I can choose any room I want. " I explained.

Silence occupied the room.

"Well, this is my room and I don't have any plan on switching rooms just because of you."

"Ow." my ached a little because of what he said.

"That's fine. I'll go. Sorry for bothering you. " I told him as I get my crutches which I dropped beside the table earlier.

"Good. Go out because I need to sleep."

I turned around only to be greeted by such a cold person, his eyes piercing through my soul.

*So it's you.*

I remember him. That one guy who was always wearing a gummy smile when he came in the company.

I never really watched him but I'd always see him from afar. Plus, he's the reason why I always had to wait till I can use the studio because he always stays later then the boys.

"Oh, and make sure to return my hoodie." he said as he stare down on the hoodie that I was wearing.

So she's right. He was the one who saw her.

I don't really know of I need to thank him or if I should be pissed off because he saw my body.

I decided to choose the second.

"I will, don't worry. Or do you want me to take this off now?" I gave him a smirk which I'm sure made him a little flustered based on the surprised look on his face.

His face started blushing which is quite funny because he was so pale.

*Good. I caught him off guard.*

"Would you mind explaining to me how you were able to come inside my unit? Oh wait, hold that. Why were you in there on the first place? " I asked.

To be honest, I was damn curious about that as well.

"Yah. What were you thinking?" I chuckled when he started playing with his hands like he had been caught doing something bad.

"I mean, I came to, ahmm, well..."

"What?" I challenged him, enjoying the scenario in front of me.

" I came to apologize okay? " he said as if surrendering.

*Ow.*

"But your door was opened which reminds me. Make sure that doesn't happen again." I can clearly see how stern he'd become after remembering it.

I smirk. "You were not supposed to come in anyways even if I forgot to close the door." I told him, my arms crossed.

"Whatever. I hate you anyways. Didn't I tell you to go out?"

"And here I thought you wanted to apologize." I shake my head. Maybe he was just forced to do so. Anyways, it's not like I was expecting him to do so.

I started walking slowly to the doors direction, my crutches with me.

I reached for the handle but before I opened the door, I told him something,

*"Stop acting like you're cool and full of that because to me..."* I sigh... "*You're broken...as broken, if not, more broken than I am.*" And then I left him all alone. I did not even bother checking his reaction

---

# Chapter 9

**Jessie's POV**

The boys helped me get my things from the next unit and I ended up taking the room in front of Yohan's because it's close to the rest room.

Rome had to share rooms with Josh.

I was shy at first but they said it was fine.

I am so lucky enough to meet such good persons like them.

Sometimes I thought, I wish I've met people like them when I'm still at school. Perhaps, my life had been different.

My eyes landed on the door in front.

I was arranging my clothes and my door is open so all I can see outside was Yohan's room.

I can't help but remember what I said to him last night.

*Stop acting like you're cool and full of that because to me, you're broken... As broken, if not, more broken than I am.*

I shake my head. "Whatever. It's true anyways." I said to myself.

I don't even know why I said those words to him. But I don't regret telling him those either.

I'm not an expert and I don't know what's bothering him but I can see that there is.

Observing people is my past time. Whenever I go out with a mask, I always ends up sitting inside a coffee shop and observing people. Not that they will think that I was creepy because people doesn't even pay attention to me to begin with.

In Yohan's case, he'd build his walls around people yet he tries to smile to show that hes fine when he's not.

I know everyone has their problems but his eyes, his eyes shows there is something deeper.

When I look into his eyes, I can see regret, pain, and yeah, hope.

Last night, when I saw Yohan's eyes, it feels like he has a dark past that is taunting him. I'm not even sure. All I know is something is wrong and he needs help.

Not that I don't need help either but I feel like I need to tell him. I feel like I need to let him now that *it's okay not to be okay sometimes.*

His door suddenly swung open and Yohan's pale complexion came out. He looked flustered when he saw me. I had to look down to make sure he doesn't see my flustered face as well.

As I continue to fold my clothes, I can hear his footsteps getting closer. I gulped. Was he angry because of what I said last night?

"Your name is Jessie, right?" he asked. I was shock to hear how calm he sounds. I looked only to see how bothered he looked.

"Ne." I replied. Then I saw the corner of his lips twitched up. "Do you need anything? If it's about last night, I'm really sorry for intruding."

He remained silent for a minute.

"Is it obvious?"

Again, he caught me off-guard.

*What is he up to?*

"What do you mean?"

He found his way on one of the chair on the corner of my room then comfortably sat. My left eyebrow went up.

"Your welcome, take your seat." I said sarcastically. He chuckled.

"Do I look easy to you?" he asked.

My eyebrows furrowed. “Get to the point mister. I don't have all the time in the world."

"You said I'm broken. What did you mean by that?"

"Ow..." I muttered.

I never really thought that he will be confronting me about that. I'm not even sure what he's thinking right now.

"About that, don't mind me. I am just a blabbermouth. Forget it." I signaled, waving my hand as if telling him I didn't mean what I said.

The next thing I knew, he's already standing a few inches away from me, I had to back down a little. But since, I was actually sitting on my bed, I don't have enough space to move with.

His right hand reached the side of my face and pushed the strands of hair that is covering my eyes.

My body shivered at the sudden contact.

*What the hell girl? Focus.*

"Yah, what --what are you doing?" *Really? you have to stutter now?*

A playful smile was written all over his face.

"Isn't it obvious? I'm going to kiss you." he said as he slowly moves down, his body almost close to mine.

My eyes landed on his face. I've never really looked at his entire face properly because the first thing that I look on a person is his eyes.

Him being too close me gave a chance to examine his face. *Ge'ez, he looks so good.*

His eyes are piercing but I can still the softness in them. He's got a prominent nose and his lips, *God, it's so inviting...*

"Liking what you see?" I looked up to see him smirking at me.

*Fuck.*

I covered my face in embarrassment.

"Jerk." I told him as I pushed him a little so he can get away from me. I'm starting to get a little suffocated due to our closeness.

*Yah, Jessie, you're so stupid.* I told to myself.

He just laughs as he went back to sit on the chair on the corner.

"I think you need to go out." I told him as I point the door, as if showing him the way out.

He looked at me intently. After a few minutes of our staring battle, he stood up and walked back to my direction.

This time, I stood up so I can can a chance to move in case he decided to be playful again.

As he reached in front of me, me eyes landed back on his lips. But I quickly looked away after seeing another smirk forming on it.

He cleared his throat. "Ahm, you're right. I'm broken. Something's wrong with me. But I want to know how you found out."

I hesitated to answer, I looked back and I saw the serious look on his face.

"Your eyes...." I answered. "Your eyes tells it all."

"Ow."

I looked down unable to handle the way he stares at me. I've been trying to act so strong since the beginning but honestly, mind body is shaking inside.

The hair on my neck all stood up when I felt his lips a little too close to my left ear. "Then, fix me." he said then I felt his lips touched my cheeks.

I was left so shock I did not even realize that he already left the room.

My heart beating so fast like a thousand horse were actually racing on it.

*Min Yohan, fuck you. You're a tease.*

And then I remember what he said, "Fix me."

Can I?

---

# Chapter 10

**Jessie's POV**

My eyes opened as I heard a soft knock on my door.

I looked around and notice that I was still inside of my room, my clothes still scattered around my bed.

I sighed. Yohan had bothered me so much, I ended up sleeping while thinking about but he said.

It took me sometime to calm down. I can still feel my body shiver because of what he did.

To be honest, I'm not even sure if he's serious about what he said.

How am I supposed to help him fix himself when I don't even knew anything about him. Well, that's aside from the fact that he's some world kpop star and that he's super handsome.

Besides, there should be a thousand of girls that wouldn't be hesitating to throw themselves out to him if he just wanted.

And what can a girl like me do to him? All I can actually do is piss him off.

It's not easy to break down people's walls. Truth is, he doesn't even need to ask for my help because healing starts from within. And I'm actually not healed myself.

Sometimes, I still cry myself at night still being taunted by the memories when I was still being bullied.

There are days when I'm afraid to go out because I might bump with someone who bullied me. I don't know how I will react.

So how, can a person like me, help someone like him?

I sighed.

I sat down when I heard my door creaked open.

"Jessie, are you awake?"

I looked at his direction and found Jason on my door.

"I am. Do you need anything?" I asked.

"Oh, did I wake you up?"

"No. I'm fine."

"Josh hyung asked me to fetch you. It's dinner time. You haven't been out of your room since breakfast." he said. I was taken aback by the concerned tone on his voice.

*Jessie, you're a lucky bitch, their fans would kill you.* I said to myself.

"Thanks, I'll follow, let me just fix this really quick. "

"Do you need help? I can carry you outside you know? I'm strong." he chuckled as he flexes his arms to show his muscles.

I laughed over his silliness. I never knew this guy can be a little naughty sometimes.

"Don't worry about me, sweetie. I'm afraid you'd stop growing if you carry me." I joked which made him frown.

"I changed my mind. I hate you. " he said but a small smile still visible on his face.

"I love you too. Now go out of my room and close the door kid."

"Bitch." he muttered for me to hear then I heard him laugh.

It's fun to know that there are now other persons that I can joke around with without them getting offended.

I'm beginning you love them even more.

After he closed the door, I stood up from my bed and jumped on my other foot.

I don't like using my crutches anyways.

I changed my top into a large black shirt which is hanging loosely on my body. I did not even bother changing into my shorts. I'd go and shower later anyways.

I went outside my room only to be greeted by the boys who were all busy watching a movie.

"Finding Nemo, really?" I can't help but mutter. Josh must have felt my presence as he turned to look at me.

"Hey, come here and sit with the most handsome of us all." he said cheekily.

"I actually think V is more handsome than you." I joked which earned a loud gasp from him.

"Yes!" I saw Vash stood up and gave a fist bump in the air. "Told you I'm the most handsome here. Huh!!!"

I watch as Jason threw a pillow to V and pulled him back to his sit.

"Don't trust her. She's just playing on you like she did earlier with me." Jason said while still frowning. I laughed at his antics.

"Why? Did I break little Jason's heart?" I said as I slowly went and sit beside Jake instead.

"Hey bitch, back off. Jake is mine!" Jason said sending daggers on me. In a playful way if I may add.

I decided to play with him.

"Whatever. I think he liked me more anyways." I said as I cling my arms with Jake's. I felt him flinched a little but relaxed when he I looked at him and smiled.

He might have understood what I was trying to do.

"I don't like Jason anyways. He's so clingy." Jake added while he leaned on my shoulders.

"You're not telling me that when I was busy taking care of our baby, you cheater!!!!!" Jason dramatically said.

*Oh God, these guys are so weird.*

"Shut up Jason. I'm watching!" I looked around and saw Yohan sitting at the couch opposite to mine. I did not even notice him earlier.

Vash laughed at Jason who just frown. I let go of Jake's arm and he sat properly as well.

My face frowned when I remembered our little incident earlier.

I'm not even sure what I feel about him. If i like him or if I simply hate his guts.

"Yah, Jessie. Aren't you going to eat? You haven't been out of your room since this morning." Rome said.

"Once second, let me get your food." Josh walked to the kitchen before I can even say no.

My attention went back to the television but the movie has finished and all I see are the credits showing on the screen.

"Why are you guys even watching 'Finding Nemo'? What are you, kids?" I asked them.

"Oh really? What do you want to watch, milady?" I laughed at Haiden.

"Hmmm, I don't know. I haven't watched 'The Wailing' yet." I simply said. I have a knacker with horror movies.

I heard some grunts.

"No. Definitely not."

"I hate you"

I heard Jason and Haiden said at the same time.

"Here. You might want to eat first before we start watching a new movie."

I looked up to see Josh giving me a plate full of food.

My stomach growl at the sight of it. Jake just laughed beside.

"Let me get you a glass of water." he then said.

"Thanks. You're so sweet unlike someone I know." I said then my eyes move on its own and landed to Yohan's direction who's actually looking at me, smirking if I may add.

I just made a face on him like a kid and I was startled when a small laugh escapes his lips.

My mouth left wide open. This is the first time saw him smile, like in person.

*And God he looks so good.*

I was so busy gawking at him I did not even noticed Jake already sitting beside me giving me a glass of water.

I looked at him with an confused expression on his face.

"What were you doing?" he asked, a playful smile now visible on his face.

"What?" I innocently said.

"You were actually checking him out." he said as he pointed at Yohan.

"Wooooooooo." I heard the boys laugh and tease me.

"Looks like little Miss Jessie has a crush on someone." Vash sing-song while him and Jason hugged each other.

"Shut up." I told them.

I looked at Jake and smack his arms which he returned with a laugh.

My eyes landed back on Yohan who's still smiling on me. "What?" I whispered which he just returned with a wink.

*I hate you.*

==========

# Chapter 11

**Jessie's POV**

I hummed my favorite song, as I separate my white clothes from the colored ones.

Afterwards, I set aside the bottoms from the top as well.

I looked around and started opening the closets inside the laundry area, trying to look for the detergents.

I'll be doing my laundry. It has been weeks and it has already piled up.

I started opening the cabinets at the top.

Bedsheets, nope.

Blankets, nope.

On the third one, I see some packs of what looks like cigarettes. My brows furrowed as I took out one pack and study it.

Nope, not a cigarette. But I can't help but laugh out loud when I realized what it is.

It definitely is a pack of condoms, the same ones those teenagers she once saw were buying in a convenience store.

And they actually don't have one but more than a dozen of it.

*Interesting.*

I can't help but chuckle. I won't even ask why they have condoms, who owns these or why it was kept on the laundry area.

As far as I know, they just moved here so it was impossible for them to bring any girls seeing that I always camp myself in the living room.

Come to think of it, it must have been hard for them to have me here. Their privacy and lovelife are getting limited.

Well, I don't mind them bringing any girls actually. I can just sleep in my room and pretend I'm not around.

I was still laughing my ass out when I felt the condoms slipped out of my hands. I turned around and saw Yohan, cheeks red as he tries to keep the condoms from his pockets.

I chuckled.

"Is that yours?" I teased.

"What? Of course not." he replied, face still crimson red.

*Oh gosh, he looks so adorable.*

"So what, is that Jake's?"

I earned a soft nudge on the head in reply.

"Shut up. Josh hyung might hear you." he told me. "Besides, Jake is still a baby."

I smirked. It's funny how everybody treats Jake as a baby when he's bigger than most of them.

"Jake is old enough to make some babies, you know." I said, a matter of fact.

"Who's making babies?" I jumped a little as the closet on the left side of the laundry area suddenly went open.

Yohan had to stop me from falling, as he put his arms around me in support.

My heart skipped a little.

I look back on the closet and from there, Vash's sleepy face emerged.

Yohan groan, arms still around my body.

I felt my cheeks heated as I felt our body, a little closer than necessary.

"Hey, Kim Vash!" Yohan said. "Why are you sleeping in that closet?"

"Ahhh...Jason, Haiden hyung, Jake and I were playing hide and seek earlier and then I fell asleep. I guess they forgot about me." he said as he tries to make his way out of the closet.

It's not something new, really. It has been a week since I started living with them and I'm so convinced that these boys are a bunch of weirdos indeed.

I once woke up at three in the morning with Jason sleeping outside of my door, face planted on the floor.

There was another time when Jake and Vash where running around the house while Josh was trying to catch them. I heard something about Pink panther and fly traps. I don't even understand.

So, me seeing Vash coming out of the closet, no pun intended, isn't really shocking at all.

"By the way, who's making babies?" he asked.

His eyes landed on us.

"Oh, are you going to make babies here?" his eyes went wide after seeing how Yohan's hands are still all over me while my right hand was sitting on his left shoulder for support.

"What?!!" I immediately removed my hands of him and pushed Yohan a little. I am too embarrassed to even look up.

I heard Vash laugh. I look up to see Yohan's lips curved into a smile, cheeks still burning red.

"Yah, Jessie-yah. You sure is so fast huh." Vash's eyebrows went up and down.

Without even looking, I grab the set of dirty clothes beside me and threw it to him.

His eye went wide along with mine, when I realized that one of my bras actually hit his face.

He jumped a little too high as if he'd seen some ghost.

"Yah!!!!! What are you doing?" he said as he threw my clothes away, including my bra.

"I hate you." he told me as he quickly ran past me and Yohan.

My embarrassment soon gone after I realized how innocent Vash is.

"And don't you dare make some babies there, you two."

I heard him shout, I had to groan. Every one of the boys probably heard him.

"That kid." I muttered. "At least I knew the condoms isn't his." I had to cover my mouth when I accidentally spoken my thoughts out loud. I totally forgot that Yohan is still with me.

I look at him as he still stands still, eyes furrowed, also looking at me.

"What?"

"You don't have a big chest, do you?"

My hands automatically covered my chest when I noticed that his eyes are actually looking at it.

"Yah!!! You're such a pervert!"

"Sorry, I just saw your bra and realized it." he replied as if it's no big deal.

"Fuck you."

And then he started moving towards me.

"Do you want to do it here, in your room, or mine?" he said as he moved a little closer to me, I had to move backwards.

I forgot, I don't have my crutches with me and my hands are still around my chest, I can barely even move from my place.

He smirks. His face already a few inches away from mine.

I swear my cheeks probably looked like a fucking tomato due to redness.

Again, my heart started beating like crazy, I had to pray a little so my nerves would calm down. I can feel the butterflies started doing somersaults around my stomach.

*What is Yohan doing with my system?*

"Maybe, we can actually use these condoms our fans gave us, what do you say?" he whispered, his lips almost touching mine.

I gulped. My body shaking a little.

My eyes landed on his red lips, I can't help but bite mine.

He must have notice what I did coz in an instant, I felt his lips crushes to mine. My eyes went wide open, my heart about to burst.

Before I can even respond, I felt his lips left from mine, I had to stop myself from pulling him back.

*No, Jessie. I warn myself.*

I looked up and saw him smirking. I pushed him real hard.

"What the hell did you just do!!!?" I hissed at him. My insides fuming.

"I think you know what I did...right? " he said smiling before he left me all alone the laundry room. My mind still a mess.

My left hand reached my lips.

I can't believe I just lost my first kiss to Min Yohan and he actually just played with me.

*You bastard.*

---

# Chapter 12

**Jessie's POV**

"Jake, tell your sister to call me... "

I look at Josh messing around with Jake who's busy playing something with Jason in the living room.

I was sitting on the living room, my casted foot sitting at the top of the table.

I laughed at how Jake just pushed his hyung away.

"Hey!!! I'm older than you!" Josh remarked as he tries to pull Jake.

"Rome told noona that you tried to flirt with Jessie when you saw her."

My brows furrowed upon hearing my name. Who's her noona by the way?

Plus, I don't really remember him flirting with me. If he's talking about the first time I saw them, it was a little obvious that he's just teasing me because I looked shy. And for the few days that I've stayed with them, I've come to realize that Josh just love telling people that he's handsome.

"I'm sorry but I'd like to pull myself out of trouble. I don't like any unnie getting mad at me or something." I told them.

Haiden sat beside me. "Don't mind them. Jake was only messing around with Josh hyung"

I nodded in response. At least I want everything to be clear.

"Wait, is Jake's noona Josh oppa's girlfriend?" I asked. I don't really know a lot about the boys.

"Have you been living in a cave?" Haiden looked at me exasperated.

Jason heard the conversation and paused the game while Vash and Yohan came inside the living room as well.

I covered my eyes a little when I realized that Vash was not wearing any top.

I sigh in relief when Yohan pull Vash back and kicked his butt. "Go back to your room and put something on."

Vash grunt but when he saw me looking awkward, he immediately obliged.

I looked at Yohan and smiled but he just rolled his eyes before he spoke, "What are you guys talking about?"

"Yah, Jessie doesn't know about Samantha." Haiden exclaimed as if I was so stupid for not knowing.

"Really?" Jake smiled.

"Why, do I have to know her?" I honestly asked.

"Nope. It's just that, you not knowing her means you're really not our fan or an obsessive fan which makes us more comfortable." Jason chimed in.

"Ow." I replied. "So who's Samantha?"

"She's my girlfriend" Yohan said.

I don't know but my heart clenched a little after he said that, I don't even know why.

"Shut up Yohan. I knew you had a crush on my girlfriend." Josh exclaimed throwing Yohan a pillow. Yohan just caught it and lay down on the cushion.

"She's my best friend and I'm still not forgiving you for hurting her." he replied, his eyes already close.

"That was six months ago. I already apologized and she had forgiven me already."

Jake faced everyone. "I'm still mad at you. And what did you do this time that made her not to contact you?"

"I honestly don't know."

Jake's face softens. "Oh no. I knew it. My sister must have realized that you're not good enough for her."

I can't help but laugh after Josh lunged himself to their youngest member.

"Shut up!!!!"

Just then, Vash came back, this time, he's now wearing a shirt.

"So, how has it been since Samantha noona last contacted you?" Vash asked Josh.

"Three days, seventeen hours, twelve minutes and ahmmm, "he looked at his watch, "forty-two seconds"

"You're so whipped, mate." I jumped in, while smiling.

Vash decided to sit on my other side. So basically, I'm squeezed between Haiden and Vash.

"They have a legendary love story to be honest. I mean. Legendary for idols if I may add." Vash pull out his phone and started typing things on it before showing it to me.

"Look what that lover boy did for Jake's noona."

I started reading everything on the internet. I gasped when I read the things that Josh oppa said. So he basically declared to the world that he loves someone.

I applaud him for that. Being an idol is a tough job. I mean, they have a lot of possessive fans so him doing all this shit means he'd fallen real hard.

"You're seriously fucking whipped." I muttered.

"Hey little girl, no cursing." Josh scolded me and then he looks back to Jake. "You know what, I shouldn't have agreed when she said she needs to go back to the US."

"She's meeting her friends, loser. I hope she finds a new guy."

And that's what made a mess. Josh, Jake and Jason started running around the living room. If I didn't know any better, I'd say I have three kids living in the house. Three for now because Vash and Haiden are pretty calm at the moment.

I gave Vash's phone back to him but then I felt him hug me from the side.

"Hey, Jessie, I'm bored. Can't we do something today like, watch movies?"

"What are we watching?"

"Power Rangers!!!" Haiden suddenly butted in.

"No, let's watch Finding Nemo instead." Jason respond.

Wow, their taste huh? I thought to myself. "How about Sponge Bob?" I told them.

"No!!!!"

"Never!!!!"

They shout in unison which made my eyebrows furrowed.

"We have bad memories while watching that. Remembering it still gives me the chills." Haiden said while he hugs himself.

"That reminds me, Jessie," I looked at Vash, "I know this may be a little rude but, do you turn weird when you have your period?"

My face blushed a little at his question. I look around and noticed all the boys including Yohan looking at me, expecting for an answer.

"Not really. Because I stay in bed whenever I have one. I have pretty bad cramps." I answered though I'm still a little uncomfortable with the question.

What's weirder is when all of them sigh in relief with my answer. The three guus already settled in a seat.

Then Haiden's phone rang.

"Oh, Rome!"

Right, Rome went out earlier because he had a meeting. The boys did not go with him as it is for a personal appointment.

"Why?"

Haiden looked confuse.

"Okay, we'll be there."

Then he hung up the phone.

"Yah, who wants to go to the office? Rome said that the new song has been decided."

Almost immediately, every one of them stood up.

"Do you want to go with us?" Josh asked.

"No, don't mind me. I'll stay here."

"By the way, when will your cast be removed?" Jake asked.

"Tomorrow." I smiled at them

"Really? Okay, we'll accompany you tomorrow if you like." Jake added.

Then they all walk their way out of the door.

When almost every one of them was already out, my mind was cut off when Yohan stopped midway and called my name.

"What?" I asked him, still a little awkward about the incident on the laundry room yesterday.

"Don't bother waiting for us."

I nodded.

He stared at me for a few moments then he spoke. "I left something on my bedside table, you can have it." and then he went out and close the door.

What was that?

But curiosity had beaten me so I went to his room.

Once I came in, I was greeted with the familiar dark aura inside, the same with it's owner. I move closer and found a box of chocolates on his table.

"Is this for me?"

But why would he give me these?

And then I found a note beside it.

"I have never properly apologized for what happened before. I hope you like these chocolates. "

My lips tugged into a smile. I remember that he wanted to apologize for what happened last time. I hugged the box of chocolates.

This is actually the first time I received a gift from someone.

And then I heard the doorbell.

Did they forget something?

I slowly made my way to the door, still on my clutch, again, not even checking the peephole.

"Did you guys for-"

My voice stopped midway when I saw a face of a beautiful girl in front of me.

"Hi. You must be Jessie. I'm Samantha." She said a little cheerfully.

My heart dropped to the floor. So she's Yohan's crush huh?

I felt my heart shatter into pieces.

She's so pretty.

But why am I so upset anyway?

---

# Chapter 13

**Jessie's POV**

"I'm sorry I was not able to prepare anything," I told her as I show the house to her. I have no choice but to use the crutches.

"No, don't worry about it. Actually, it's my fault for coming over without any notice." she shyly admitted. "It was supposed to be a surprise."

"Owwww."

I smiled as he cheekily winked at me.

*Oh, God. Can I have a girl crush?*

After barely talking with her for merely five minutes, I can now see why Josh oppa fell for her. She's such a sweetheart.

"You should have seen how Josh oppa nagged at Jake asking him to call you. He thought he did something wrong." I told her. We're now both sitting on the cushion in the living room.

"That's just how he is." she chuckled.

"Ahhm, Jessie, do you mind if I ask you something?" she said a little hesitant. I can see her fiddling with the hem of her white dress.

I felt a little nervous. This isn't about what Jake said earlier right? About Rome telling her that Josh oppa tried to flirt with me?

With that in mind, I started rambling in panic. "Unnie, Josh oppa don't like me," I said a little too fast.

I was caught off-guard when she suddenly laughed.

"No silly. Don't worry. I trust Josh enough. But that doesn't mean that I don't trust you okay?" she said still smiling.

God, she's such an angel.

My heart ached a little.

So that's why Yohan has a crush on her. I mean, who wouldn't? She's beautiful. She's kind. She's just so perfect.

"Ahmmm, I just wanted to ask if--ahm, if the boys know who you really are?"

My mouth formed an "O" shape. So that's what she's curious about.

"What about?" I asked. I'm not sure which of the two is she referring with.

"I mean, you being Choi Jessie?" she asked.

I shyly smiled at her. "I haven't really had the chance to tell them that after all that had happened these past few days," I admitted.

"You know, it's funny how six months ago, they were basically living with me but now, it seems like I have to stay with them in the meantime."

"Why? What happened to your house?" I asked curiously.

"Oh, after they moved out, I decided to ask my mother to move in. But last month, I went back to the US to meet my friends and now it feels weird to go back home. I guess I'll just give them the house as a gift so I'd probably just go and rent a new one or whatever. I'll talk about it with Jake."

"Unnie, you know you can always stay with them right?"

Based on what I've heard earlier; I think that the boys had been used to her so I'm not seeing any problem why she can't live with them.

"I don't know, after what happened, I think it is still better for me to have a place on my own. Plus, even though a lot of their fans have been supportive of our relationship, there are still tons in which doesn't. I don't want Josh to feel burdened again."

Wow. How can she just think about other people instead of her happiness?

And then she suddenly started laughing on her own as if she thought of a personal joke.

"Why?" I curiously asked.

"You see, hahaha," she was already doubling with laughter and can barely continue. "I'm sorry, one sec." After she had calmed herself, she continued. "The boys are a little aloof to stay with me now. They have some issues with my weird habits. I think I might have scared them a little."

I just nodded though I was still a little confused.

"Anyway, make sure to be careful. After some obsessive fans invaded their dorm, this house is like a haven for them. Make sure people don't know that you're staying with them. You know, some people think weirdly."

"I know. Thanks, unnie." I genuinely smiled. I feel like I found a sister.

And then her eyes landed on the piano on the corner.

"Jessie, I know it's a little personal but, what I really what to know is if the boys know..."

"What exactly is it unnie?"

And then I followed what she's looking at.

I choked on my saliva. How did she know that?

She shyly smiled at my reaction.

"I actually worked for your father that's why I know."

"But not a lot of people knew about that. I mean, me being Choi Jessie probably but that, I think, just a few people knew about it."

She rubbed the tip of her palms and looked at me. "I was actually one of those few people. But don't worry, I don't intend to tell others about it. I didn't even mention it to Josh nor my brother."

I nodded, glad that I still have someone that I can trust.

"Aren't you hungry?" My eyes snapped back to her direction.

Come to think of it, I suddenly heard my stomach grumble.

"Let's eat out? I mean, the guys would probably be home later than the usual. I think I heard that their new song has already been chosen." she smiled at me meaningfully. My cheeks went beet red.

"Let me just go ahead and change. And let's get your luggage inside my room by the way."

I went inside my room and I had to change really quick with a pair of denim shorts and a black hooded sweater.

Once I was satisfied with how I look, I went straight to the living room and saw Samantha playing on her phone.

"Let's go?" I asked her.

Once her eyes landed on me, she immediately scanned my outfit and I swear I saw her smile playfully.

"You know what, I feel like you and Yohan are compatible. I mean, you wear the same type of clothes, and your aura, it's basically screaming Yohan!"

Again, my cheeks went crimson red.

"No. Please don't say that especially if he's around. He might get upset." I shyly informed her.

"Tssss. Yohan won't be upset. Josh was telling me things okay. I feel like Yohan actually likes you." she told me before she stood up and clutch her arms around me.

*What? Did she actually say Yohan likes me?*

*Fuck. My* heart started beating faster.

*I'm screwed.*

---

# Chapter 14

**Jessie's POV**

We just went out of the hospital. I called my doctor and asked if the cast on my feet can be removed today instead of tomorrow and she said it should be fine, so Samantha unnie accompanied me to it.

It's actually a good thing so we can freely go out without being troubled by my cast.

"Where are should we go?" I asked her.

"What do you want to eat anyways? One sec, do you want to remove your mask?" She worriedly looked at me. "I feel like you are uncomfortable right now," she added.

"Ahm, it's okay. I'm not used to going out without it or my cap."

She nodded in response. Perhaps understanding my situation. Besides, I'm not used to attracting attention. I am actually a little comfortable because a lot of people are staring at me mainly because of her.

I looked around and notice that a few people had been looking at our direction, mostly young ones. They probably noticed Samantha unnie since her face had been plastered all over media for being Jake's sister and dating the oldest member of VOELEVARD.

I lowered my cap further, afraid to attract any more attention.

"Let's go." I flinched a little due to the sudden contact but I relaxed once I realized that it was her hands.

Samantha unnie is really sweet. I feel like I found a sister.

We roam around the mall trying to see anything to buy but apparently, Samantha unnie isn't someone who likes girly clothes.

"You know what? I can just take another set of clothes from Josh's closet. I don't need to buy anything. How about you?" she smiled at me.

"I'm all good."

I smiled back at her and I felt her hands clasped on mine. I must admit, I'm not used to this kind of intimacy or skin contact because I never really had friends.

"I'm famished. Let's go get something to eat sweetheart."

We entered a classy restaurant. Once seated, the waiter immediately went to get our order.

"What do you want?" she asked.

I looked at the menu and can't decide.

"I'd get whatever you order, unnie."

Once the waiter had gotten our order. Samantha noona looked at me.

"You sure you don't want to remove even your mask?" she asked a little worried.

I removed my mask. We've seated on a secluded area anyways.

"I'm sorry unnie. I'm not really comfortable showing my face outside."

"It's okay. I'm just worried you won't be able to breathe properly. There are too many people around. By the way, is your feet okay?" she asked.

"Yes. It's fine." I smiled at her. "Unnie, can I go to the restroom for a while?"

She nodded then she took out her phone.

I stood up from my seat and went straight to the restroom.

After doing my business, I went ahead and wash my face. I didn't notice the three people coming inside.

"I knew it. It was actually you." My eyes snapped to my right.

I felt my heart skipped a bit.

Standing in front of me are the three girls so made my school life a living hell.

Wow, I can't believe they're still together. I guess it is true when they say that birds with the same feathers, stay together.

I turned off the faucet and noticed that they moved a little closer to my direction.

"What are you doing?" I asked, a little afraid when I noticed that one of them had locked the door.

"Do you know what happened when you drop out of school? We were expelled!" one girl shouted at me. I can no longer remember their names.

After I decided to be home schooled, I erased all of my memories of being trapped in a four cornered room. There weren't any good memories to be remembered anyway. Everything about those moments has been painful.

I stepped back when I noticed how mad these girls looked like.

"I really hate you."

"Why didn't you die for real when we cut your wrist?"

I got a little scared. My heart started pounding really hard on my chest and my knees started shaking a little.

"And I was sure you were with Samantha unnie earlier. What were you doing leeching yourself with someone so famous like her?"

My eyes went wide open. I almost forgot about Samantha unnie. She might get worried.

"Please, let me go," I begged them.

"I don't think so." the girl who seemed like their leader slapped me real hard. My knees gave in and I fell on the ground.

"It hurts right?" I heard her laugh.

"Stop, please," I muttered, tears now streaming down my face.

And then she started kicking me while the other was hitting my face. I screamed in pain. My mind started to get on a mess and I can no longer hear what is happening.

Things that had happened to me in school started to flashback before me.

My body started to feel numb, small dots started to cover

Of course, nobody is going to help me. No one cares.

I felt my whole world crashing down on me.

I'm now back to being miserable.

*Please, just one person...*

I continue crying as my body received all the pain that they are giving. I didn't even notice when a soft pair of hands wrapped around me.

"Jessie, are you okay?" I looked up and saw the worried look on her eyes.

I had to move my eye muscle a lot to recognize the person in front of me. "Samantha unnie." my voice hoarse.

"Why did you let them do this to you?" she looked worried yet upset at the same time.

Her eyes are teary.

*Great. I made her upset.*

She was brushing my hair out of my face when I felt my consciousness drifts away and soon, darkness had taken over me.

---

# Chapter 15

**Yohan's POV**

"Calm down babe. She'll be fine." I watch Josh as he tries calm down Samantha who is obviously stressed as he pace back and forth in the living room.

So, apparently, Samantha came earlier to surprise us especially Josh. The thing is, her arrival isn't really a surprise anymore because a lot of fans had tagged her to our sns account saying something about her getting into a fight.

Josh and Jake almost freaked out when they saw the posts.

I've never seen Samantha looking so mad actually. She looks like she can kill someone this very instant. Me and the boys were being careful enough not to get on her nerves.

Even Jake who normally toys with her decided to shut up. Only Josh can calm her down.

"I can't calm down okay? I saw what those girls did to her. I saw how she just curled up in a ball crying." she said as she sat down on the couch, eventually breaking down.

My heart ached a little at what she said.

I then remember the girl sleeping inside her room.

"It's not your fault." Josh cooed her.

"It is. If I did not invite her out or asked her to remove her mask, maybe those girls wouldn't see her. She looked so helpless earlier." she said almost crying.

"No. You did a great job protecting her. Actually, I never knew you could do that."

We all chuckle upon remembering the video we saw earlier. Samantha was standing so scary in front of the three girls who were kneeling in front of her.

She was lecturing the three with all the securities behind her back. She looked badass.

"Shut up." she replied and she looked at us and we immediately stopped laughing.

"I'm more concern on why she allowed those people to do that to her. And I'm guilty for showing her that I was a little upset about what happened."

Josh sigh.

After what happened. Samantha had brought Jessie to the hospital and after getting her treated, Jessie requested that she be sent home so she can rest.

I don't even know how or why but she was immediately discharged. Once they arrive, Jessie had stayed inside her room and the last time that Samantha had check on her, she was sleeping.

"Can't we do something about it?" V said helplessly. He was hugging Haiden who had cried earlier. He's such a pure soul.

"Sadly, no. It's not our position to do anything. Honestly, I believe it all depends on Jessie." Rome replied.

We all turned quiet.

He's right.

As always.

"Then what should we do? Are we going to let these things continue?" Jason broke the silence.

But nobody responded.

"You guys don't have to worry about me." our eyes snapped to the other direction when we heard her voice.

Standing on the corner was Jessie.

She's wearing shorts and a loose shirt, her hair was falling loosely on her shoulders.

My eyes soften when I noticed the marks on her arms as well as her face.

How dare those girls do this to her?

I suddenly got pissed off.

She walked towards us and I was startled a little when she sits next to me, her arms touching mine.

"I'm sorry I got you all worried and I'm sorry unnie I ruined your surprise." she said as her head hung lowly, not even making any eye contact towards us.

From the corner of my eyes, I saw Samantha stood up from her seat and pulled Jessie for a hug.

"Don't worry about it." she cooed her. "Besides, Josh's face is getting uglier, I don't even mind if I don't get to see him more often."

Then we heard Josh hyung gasp, loud enough for the whole Seoul to hear.

"Did you just say that this Worldwide handsome guy is getting ugly?" he said exasperated.

Samantha, Jessie and the boys laughed out loud making the atmosphere lighten.

"Admit it hyung, you're not as handsome as you used to be." Jason adding a fuel to the fire.

"Even Jessie said that I am more handsome than you are." V added even getting an approval to Jessie.

I breathe a little when I saw her smiling.

"Stop ganging up on me. yah, Yohan, help me." he walked towards me asking for help but before he can even come near me, I shoo him away. "Get away from me, ugly!"

We laughed out loud on his horror-stricken face.

"Yah, Samantha!!!!" he stomped on his feet like a little child and pouted at his girlfriend.

I looked at Jessie and she was now laughing so hard.

Samantha then came towards her boyfriend to coo him because Josh hyung is on the verge if crying. Sometimes I ask how he was actually the oldest when he always act more like the youngest rather than Jake.

I had to catch my breath when Jessie turned her eyes on me, still smiling.

She looks so pretty.

I remember how I kissed her the other day. I don't even know why but I ended up kissing her.

To be honest, I was initially pissed off of her because she looks a little like someone I know, but within a matter of days, I realized that they are a complete different person.

And I don't know why but I seem to be attracted to her. It makes me want to protect her.

"Yah, hyung, why are you blushing?" I threw my pillow on Jake when I hears what he said and I notice Jessie looking at me to.

I had no choice but to look away.

"Don't tell me---?" I had to threw another pillow so Vash would stop talking.

"I swear to God; I will pull that dirty tongue of yours if you spoke." I threaten him but the younger one just rolled his eyes and stood up.

"Said someone who is proud by his tongue technology" he muttered but of course I heard him loud and clear.

Soon enough, all of them gathered a few feet away from Jessie and I and it was so fucking obvious that they were talking about us.

"Really?" I heard Rome exclaimed but Haiden immediately covered his mouth as they all look at me. My eyes never leaving them.

I sigh. *These boys.*

I look back to Jessie who's busy fiddling with the hem of her shirt.

"Are you sure you're okay?" I asked her, this time, my tone is lower, afraid that I might upset her again.

She seemed startled with my question but she smiled anyways.

"Of course. Don't worry about me." she shyly answered.

I moved a little closer and pulled her arms gently. She stiffens a little but after a moment, I felt her relaxed.

I started tracing the marks on her skin, my jaw tightening every now and then upon seeing all of the evidence of her pain.

"Does it hurt?" I asked, afraid that I might add up to the pain that she's feeling.

She shakes her head.

"Ahm, Jessie?" I called her name. Her body now leaning back to the cushion but her weight is still pressed against mine, her left hand still on my hand as I continue to trace her skin.

"Huh?" she whispered. I noticed that her eyes were closed.

"Does this happened before?"

I felt her flinch but her eyes remained closed.

After a few second of silence, she responded.

"Before, when I was still in school. But that was long time ago. It stopped when I decided to get home-schooled"

My heart hung out of my chest.

So she had a bad childhood. Somehow, I felt guilty after remembering those times that I had been so mean to her.

Silence covered the air.

"*I'll make sure you won't be getting any of these anymore.*" I thought to myself.

"What did you say?" she asked.

"Huh?"

"*Shit. Did I say it out loud?*"

And then I heard her laugh.

I groan. "I said that out loud as well huh?"

My thoughts were soon confirmed when I heard the boys chuckling on the corner.

I glared at them and soon, they all started running.

"You're all dead." and I stood up from my seat as I run to kill these boys.

Jessie stayed seated as she laughed at our stupidity.

---

# Chapter 16

**Jessie's POV**

"No. I need you to open your mouth a little more when you get to that part." I said as Jason sang his part for their new song.

"Yes, sorry." he apologize as he fixes his earphones.

"Again."

I close my eyes as I listen to him sing.

To be honest, Jason's voice was so good but for this song that they were recording, he needs to make an extra effort.

"Stop. You have to pronounce the last syllable a little longer."

"Okay."

"Again"

And he did.

"Better. Now I need you to start from that phrase, okay?"

"Ne." he answered but the irritation on his voice did not slipped from my ear.

Yep, I am behind the recording of every VOELEVARD song that is being produced. And the boys don't have any idea about it.

My voice is always masked whenever we do the recording and none of the boys had known who I was.

And I don't plan on letting them know.

Imagine the hate that I would be getting from the boys.

Ever since, the boys have had bad feelings towards me, their music director. Of course I know that. Everybody knows.

The pd's were apologetic about it but I never mind.

It was a job and I understand where they're coming from.

I've given them a hard time but I don't regret it. Regardless if we've come to be friends right now.

There are moments in which our opinions clashed especially with those who've trained longer like Yohan, Rome and Haiden but I don't mind.

If their opinion is good, it's fine by me. Plus, my father normally stays with me. I'm normally a person not to talk so he makes sure everything is okay.

"Good job. Now, call Jake so he can do the last part."

"Ne."

I looked at him and he didn't even hide his exhaustion.

He'd been inside the recording booth for 4 hours. I bet he's really exhausted.

My eyes landed on my phone when I saw a message from Samantha unnie. She's asking me where I was so I responded back.

**Samantha**: Hey, calm down a little. These guys are talking about their devil music director. I was close to laughing my ass off.

I chuckled at what she said.

**Me**: Beats me. Haha

**Samantha**: When are to going to tell them?

I sigh.

I don't think I can ever tell the boys. To be honest, I don't even know how they will react.

Me: In time unnie.

I looked around and saw Jake come in. He's actually the last one to record.

Normally, I don't have problems with Jake because he's also a perfectionist.

"Let's start Kookie." I told him but he looked at my direction a little shock.

I was sure that he's unable to see through the tinted glass but it feels like he's looking straight at me.

"What's wrong?" I asked him, still in my masked voice.

"What did you call me?" he asked.

And then I realized what he meant.

*Oh shit. Did I call him Kookie?*

My mouth went dry.

"Oh that? I heard people calling you that and it just slipped. Don't mind it. Now, let me hear how you wanted to deliver the chorus part and I'll tell you what I think" I told him immediately diverting his attention to somewhere else.

He looked confused but followed anyways.

After a few alterations and recordings, we were done.

I checked my wrist and realized that it was already 11 pm.

"Miss Jessie, do you want to eat with us?" the senior music director asked.

I quickly waved my hands. "No, don't mind me. You can all enjoy." I said as I stood up from my seat.

He bowed a little which I returned.

The senior music director smiled before going out with the rest.

I was so glad that the guys on my team are very kind. To be honest, at first, they had been aloof and uncomfortable with me. I was so sure they were bothered that I was on their team and they don't really trust that I can do my job.

But I was glad everything went well in the end.

Before I can even stand up, I heard my phone buzz.

**Unknown**: Where are you?

My brows furrowed. Who could it be?

**Me**: Who's this?

**Unknown**: Yohan.

My heart started hammering on my chest.

Ge'ez, he's starting to give a weird effect on me.

**Me**: I'm in Healing Heart Entertainment. Doing some errands but I'm about to go home.

**Unknown**: Uh, stay there. I'm going to pick you up. I'll be there in five.

**Me**: Uh. Okay.

Why would he pick me up anyways? And how did he get my number?

And then I remember Samantha unnie. She must have given it to him.

**Unknown**: Where are you? I'm inside the building.

I grab my cap and face mask and immediately went out the recording studio.

I was still typing on my phone when I bump into someone.

"Why are you getting out of the devil's lard?"

I looked up and saw a serious looking Yohan. Not that he doesn't normally look one.

*Oh shit*. I mentally scolded myself after being caught.

"Ah, I was asked to arrange some files in there." I awkwardly answered.

He looked at me intently.

"Have you seen the devil inside?" he asked.

So they call me devil huh?

"Nope. No one is inside." I lied.

He was still looking at me intently before he turned back to walk out of the building, pulling me in my right hand.

Before we exit, he stopped and looked back at me.

"Why are you dressed like that?" he asked.

I looked down and my brows furrowed. I was wearing a loose black shirt where the front was tucked inside my denim shorts. On my feet was a white converse.

I have been wearing some shorts these past few days because I'm still feeling a little weird every time I feel some fabric on my legs. I feel like my sprain hasn't fully healed.

"What's wrong with what I'm wearing?"

He removed his jacket and threw it on me.

"Wear that."

After wearing his jacket, I can't help but close my eyes, his smell is all over me.

"Stop sniffing my jacket. You look weird."

My eyes snapped open and my cheeks turned red for being caught.

You really are stupid, Jessie. I scolded myself.

Then I felt my cap and mask taken out of my hands.

I watch him put my cap and mask on my face.

Again, my heart started beating irregularly.

Yohan is being really weird.

I looked around and saw some of the employees looking at us so I bowed down.

"Don't mind them. Let's go." he said before he grabbed my right hand, his cold hands clasped around mine.

I looked at him in shock but I can't even utter a word, his face is now also covered in mask.

"Yah, Yohan. You can release my hand. I don't think it's good for you to do this." I told him as I notice some people looking at us.

Our faces being covered is not helping at all because people are getting more curious.

"Don't look at them." he said as he called a cab.

Once inside, I looked at him from the side.

"Where are we going?"

"We're going to eat because I've been hearing your stomach complaining since earlier."

Even with my face covered, I am sure I still look like a red tomato.

He just chuckled at me.

And then I heard my phone buzz. I pulled it out and saw Samantha unnie requesting for a video call.

"Unnie." I said as I answer. I don't have my headphones so it was on speaker.

"Did he pick you up?" she said a little excitedly.

My brows furrowed.

"Yohan? Ah yeah..." as I look at Yohan who was staring outside of the window.

Then I heard Samantha unnie screaming at the other line.

"Ahhh, you're hurting my ears." I heard Josh oppa sigh as I see Samantha unnie run around the background.

What's wrong with them? I asked to myself.

Jason and Vash are now showing in the screen.

"Are you two going out on a date?" Jason wiggled his eyebrows.

I had to keep my face straight even though I'm going mental inside. I had to scold myself for removing my mask earlier after we enter the cab.

"Yes, yes they are. Did you see Yohan hyung pestering noona for her number earlier?" I heard Jake said on the background.

I felt Yohan moved beside me.

"We're not dating." I told them, my heart beating like crazy I'm afraid Yohan might hear it from where he's seating.

"Yeah, but you've kissed and you're blushing." Vash as a matter of fact.

"Hey, don't do anything that we won't do okay?"

Yoingi took the phone from me after hearing what Josh oppa has said.

"Shut it. We'll be home soon. Bye." he said before ending the call then gave it back to me.

"Don't answer them. They're weird."

But then I can't help but think about what they said.

*Is this really a date? He doesn't like me does he?*

But then curiosity had beaten me so I asked.

"Is this a date?" I shyly asked him.

He looked at me and smiled.

"Do you want it to be?"

And then he flashed his gummy smile.

*Fuck.*

"I have never been into one." I admitted.

His brows furrowed.

"Really? Don't worry. We'll make sure to have as many as you want. For now, count this as our first date." he said before his face moved closer to mine in a speed of a lightning and kiss me softly in the lips.

My hands covered my mouth in an instant and my eyes caught the face of the driver grinning to us.

I had never wished to be eaten by the ground this much. Though I won't deny that I like what he did.

Yohan, what should I do to you?

I looked outside the car and a smile slowly creep on my face.

*Do I like him?*

The wild hammering on my chest answered my question.

---

# Chapter 17

**Jessie's POV**

"I am really exhausted. I swear that devil is really doing this on purpose!"

I cringed after hearing what Jason had said while sprawled on the floor.

They just came back after a long recording for their second song and again, the boys had been venting out their frustration about their devil producer which they didn't know was me.

"He said my voice kept on cracking, it isn't!" Jake pouted.

"It is, Jake. Puberty is hitting you hard." Rome teased.

"I was way past off my puberty." he snickered.

I look at Samantha unnie who was chuckling while sitting down the cushion, her feet spread across Jake and Josh who are both frowning.

"Is it that funny to you?" Jake asked amused how their frustrations seem to be funny to his older sister.

"No." she said as she giggles, her eyes on me.

At this rate, the boys are going to catch on.

"Jake, your noona is really weird," Vash muttered, his eyes glued on the alien toy that was given by one of his fans.

It's funny how he was having a hard time thinking the perfect name for the toy. What's more amusing was, he was torn between 'Juju' and 'Jiji'.

"Hyung, your girlfriend is weird." Jake piped in, as he plays piano tiles on his phone.

A soft chuckle escaped my lips as I see Samantha unnie kick Jake on the side while the other simply groan in pain.

"Yah, stop pestering your sister." then Josh smiled at his girlfriend. The guy knows how to handle his girl as Samantha unnie pouted playfully as he looked at Josh.

"I'm going in my room. I can't take this." Rome stood up but as he does so, his right knee 'accidentally' hit the table making the glass of water at the top fall.

Thank God Haiden was quick enough to catch the glass before it came in contact with the ground.

"Or not." he said as he quickly sat back to the couch, not even sparing a glance at Josh.

After a few weeks of staying with them, I came to realize that Rome always destroys thing while Josh either fixes or replaces it. It's like a cycle that never ends.

"Seriously?" Josh glared at him and Rome just grimace.

The leader isn't the boss in the house, it's the mom.

"It's so boring," Haiden said as he tries to lay beside Yohan who's eyes already closed.

"By the way," all of us had to turn our head to Samantha unnie after she bolted up from her seat, clapping her hands as if she just thought of something interesting.

Her eyes landed on mine and I had prayed to God that zombies soon attack because the glint in her eyes shows that she's up to no good.

"Why don't you sing for us?" she blatantly told everyone.

My eyes went wide as I look at her

*What are you doing?* I mentally sent her a message and I was sure she had understood because she just shrugged her shoulders.

"Or would you guys rather hear me sing?" she joyfully exclaimed as if it was a good idea.

I was surprised when Yohan bolted up from his slumber and looked at me.

"Please sing for us, Jessie." He immediately answered, his eyes pleading.

*What's wrong with him?*

I heard Rome muttering something about some balls.

"We beg of you." I look at Jason who's now kneeling on the floor, his hands clasped together. And then he pulled Vash who must have understood and done the same.

"I'm not that bad." Samantha unnie pouted.

"We're a little afraid it isn't just Rome's balls would be in danger," Haiden said wide-eyes.

I looked at them confused and I heard Samantha unnie whimpered.

"Actually, she wasn't bad. As long as she's not on that you-know-what state, she sounds amazing." Jake shrugged while Josh nodded. But the rest of the boys just glared at the two as if not believing any of it.

"Please? Pretty please?"

I rolled my eyes as Jason, Vash, and Haiden continued to pester her while Yohan just looked at me smiling as if telling me to go for it.

I gulped. I'm not actually used to letting people hear me sing. That time when Yohan heard me, it was an accident.

"I-ahm," I'm not even sure how to respond.

I look at Samantha unnie who was smiling at me widely.

A sigh escaped my lips.

I guess, there's no harm in doing.

I stood up from my seat and adjusted the shirt that I was wearing because it went up a little showing my tummy. My face flushed as I saw the boys smiling cheekily at me.

I went and sat down on the piano, I gulp as I feel all eyes on my back.

"You play the piano?" Jason asked, amused.

I just nodded in response thought I wasn't really sure if they saw as my back is already facing them. My hands landed on my thighs, rubbing the imaginary sweat on my palms, a little nervous about what's about to happen.

I've never really let people hear me sing. My voice is something I am not confident with, I mean, not that people would want to listen to me anyways.

Nobody listens, that's how things have been ever since.

I look back to the guys who were patiently waiting for me.

*Okay, this is it.*

I lifted my hands and started ticking in notes, making myself used to keys in front of me. After a minute, I started pressing some keys that are all too familiar with me, the melody ringing in my ears. A song that I usually sing whenever I am alone.

**Untrue... but I hope it's true**

**You You You**

I closed my eyes as I feel the music. Music is the only thing that keeps me lost in my own world, an escape that I'm all too willing to take.

**Don't think of anything, stop whatever it is**

**Don't say anything, just close your eyes**

**Just give me a smile**

**I still can't believe what's happening**

**All of this seems like a dream, a beautiful dream**

**Don't try to disappear**

**Is it true? Is it you?**

**You You**

**You're so beautiful, you're my all**

**Untrue... but I hope it's true**

**You You You**

**Will you stay by my side forever?**

**Will you promise me you'll never leave?**

**If I let go of your hand, you'll fly away and runaway**

**I'm scared to death, please don't run away**

**Will you stop time, stop every thing?**

**If this moment passes**

**As though it hadn't happened**

**I'm scared, so please don't leave...**

The song ended and I was still lost. Music, I can live with music alone with my life and I will okay with that. A smile tugged at the corner of my lips, almost forgetting that I wasn't alone in the room.

Then it hit me, I slowly turned around and saw the boys, their mouths hanging wide open.

For a moment, I got really nervous.

"Is it really that bad?" I asked them, a sad smile covered my face.

It took a minute before I heard Samantha unnie clapping and jumping up and down.

"Oh my God, that was so beautiful!" she exclaimed. I looked at the ground, unable to handle her compliment.

It was just then that the boys seemed to get out from the trance that they're in.

"That was so amazing!" Josh oppa said, smiling widely at me along with Rome, looking a little proud.

"Your voice was so beautiful. It's so mesmerizing." Jake added.

"Why were you keeping that voice all to yourself? That voice deserves to be heard by the world." I giggled at what Jason had said.

"Damn it Jason, how can I follow that up?" Haiden turned to the other looking annoyed. But once he looked back at me, a smile was showing on his face. As expected with our hope.

They've been cheering me all of a sudden and I had to laugh at Vash who was jumping up and down, his hands clasped into mine.

*This kid is a little too hyper for me.*

And then my face landed on Yohan. He was looking at me intently, as if in deep thought.

*Did he not like it?*

My heart fell from my chest. In all honesty, I was waiting for him to say something about it.

Maybe it wasn't as good as I thought.

My thoughts were taken away by Vash who pulled me back to the piano and had asked me to teach him how to play.

And somehow, my mind got distracted by the little alien beside me.

*At least there are some people who still appreciate me, that's what it matters.* I told to myself. So for once, I'm letting myself to get lost within the happiness that these people bring before me.

---

# Chapter 18

**Jessie's POV**

"What-" I was busy checking for the key on my backpack when I got the shock of my life after Yohan pulled me back away of the unit, his eyes wide in panic.

He pulled me closer and lead me to my own unit instead.

My eyes automatically closed once I smell his perfume.

*Damn you Min Yohan. You smell so good.*

I'm not sure how long my eyes were closed but it startled me when I heard him cleared his throat.

I looked at him confused. And then I realized that all the boys except for Josh are outside, sitting on the ground.

Vash was lying on the floor, his head on Jake's lap while both were sleeping.

Rome was checking on his phone. Jason was sitting down, asleep, his head dangling before him while Haiden was looking at Yohan and I, his eyes a little sleepy.

"What are you guys doing here and where is Josh and Samantha unnie?"

Haiden just pointed at the direction of their unit.

I just came out early this morning to check something in the office.

"Okay, I get it. But why are you guys outside?" I asked a little confuse.

I heard Yohan sigh so I turn towards him.

"Samantha is on it again and only Josh hyug can manage that weird lady when she's at that state."

"Wait, what's wrong with unnie?" I asked concern.

"It's nothing serious. She's fine but we need to stay away from her a little because we're all exhausted and having her around at her current state is really stressful."

I looked at Haiden and he just smiled at me.

He seemed to have noticed my confusion.

*What state was he talking about anyway?*

"Can you just open your unit instead so we can all go inside?" he asked.

I noticed the dark circles under his eyes. He must have been so stressed so I pulled out the key on my unit and opened it.

I heard Haiden waking up the others. And a giggle escaped my lips after I heard Vash saying something about him being taken by a spaceship.

Too bad, Haiden had awoken him.

Once inside, the boys soon all went in.

The younger members all fell on the cushion trying to continue their sleep while Haiden and Rome went straight to the kitchen.

"Jessie, do you have anything on your kitchen? We're a little hungry." I heard Haiden shouting from the kitchen before a loud bang echoed.

"Yah, Rome!"

I shake my head after hearing the noise.

Of course, Rome could easily break anything.

I immediately went inside the kitchen and saw a metal pot on the floor. Rome was looking at me apologetically.

"Sorry."

A sigh escaped my lips.

"Let's just have a take-out. You two can order. I'll just change into something comfortable." I told them before I went inside my room.

Half of my clothes are in their dorm. Actually, I was thinking of moving back to my unit since my foot have been better. But then Samantha unnie came.

Once I was able to change into a sweatpants and a white shirt, I went outside to try to check on the boys. The sight may come out a little shocking for other people but I've seen worse so this scene before me is pretty normal.

Jake running around with Vash on his back. Jason was trying to pull Vash off so he can ride instead.

The funny thing is, all of their hairs were tied on a ponytail which I must have left at the table before. And Jason was carrying a broom.

Haiden was on the phone trying to order. I laugh a little when I heard him trying to change his voice and acting like a foreigner.

"Yes, two box. Ahm, yes yes. Of course. Pay, okay. Here, pay."

"Hyung, did you order a chicken?" Jake ask putting Vash down, his butt landing straight on the floor.

"Yah!!!!" Vash whined.

"Vash, let's use this new app that I download." Jason caught Vash's attention.

"You think so?"

Soon enough. The younger members was doing goofy faces on the phone while Haiden was trying to fit his face in the screen.

*These children.*

On the other hand, Rome was trying to check into something under the table.

Shit. That was a souvenir I got from when I went to the US.

"Rome, No, don-"before I was even able to finish, it fell on the floor, breaking into pieces.

His eyes went to me and he mouthed the same words he'd said to me earlier.

"Or yeah. That's fine." I told him. He flashed his dimples on me but sadly, it won't work because I was internally crying for my baby piano souvenir.

And then I looked around. Someone is missing.

"Rome, where is Yohan?"

"He was roaming around earlier. I don't know" he said not even looking at me.

And then it hit me.

*Impossible. He isn't there right? I mean, he shouldn't be there.*

My actions were quick and my heart started beating like crazy. I have never been this nervous my entire life.

Once I open the room, my mouth hang wide open.

I nearly choked on my saliva.

I push the door closed, preparing for something I'm sure I wouldn't like.

I kept quiet, until he broke the silence.

"I had an idea but it is still shocking."

He was sitting on my swivel chair; his feet were on the top of the table.

My eyes landed on the ground.

Of course, I recognized the sarcasm on his voice.

And then I heard him laugh. It was scary.

"So that's why Samantha was laughing every time we try to say something. It's because she knew."

Then, silence filled the room.

"I'm sorry." I muttered lowly I was not even sure if he heard.

"You made a fool out of us. You make us look stupid. You played with us."

Every singles word cuts deep within me. It was just his voice but every fucking word hurts like hell.

And then I heard a noise. I look up and saw him hitting the table.

He was so angry.

My body started shaking and somehow, I felt my tears on the verge of escaping my eyes.

*This was never the plan. He shouldn't be finding out this way.*

I heard the movement of the swivel chair. Before I knew it, he went past me and run outside, the smashing right through my face.

*I guess it's over.*

Just when I thought I've found a new set of friends, that's when I suddenly lose them.

*It's because I am stupid.*

*Whoever said life was easy?*

---

# Chapter 19

**Jessie's POV**

"Haiden, I prepared you guys dinner." I said as I try to get their attention.

"Rome..."

I tried calling each of the boys but none even paid attention.

After what happened earlier, the guys all went back to their dorm, and of course, Yohan told them about it.

The boys were all disappointed and everybody except Josh oppa was glaring daggers at me.

Josh oppa is with Samantha unnie. Apparently, Samantha unnie has her period and she gets really weird if she has so the boys decided to stay in my unit, but after what happened, they all went back without batting an eye.

A sigh escaped my lips as none of the boys stood up even after I told them I've cooked.

Jake continued playing on his phone while Jason and Vash were playing some sort of a game on their own.

Rome was reading a book and Haiden was pretending to be busy while watching a television.

As for Yohan, I've never seen him since then. I'm guessing that he's inside his room.

I tried to stop the tears that is trying to escape my lips.

*Why does it hurt so bad?*

I've been ignored more than half of my life but why am I still being affected like this?

I guess it's because even if I've only stayed for a few weeks with them, I've come to love their presence around me.

The way Josh teaches me his recipes whenever he cooks...

The way Haiden dances happily in front of me every time I look sad...

The way Rome talks to me about anything, giving out his honest opinions...

The way Jason messes up with my hair every time he sees me...

The way Vash flashes his boxy smile in front of me and talks to me about anything that is really weird...

The way Jake shyly smiles at me but will always help me whenever...

And of course, Yohan...

My dear Yohan...

I don't even know when it started but I feel like he holds a special part in my life...

I am missing everything about him...

The way he teases me whenever...

The way my heart flutters by a simple touch from him...

It wasn't even long after we had our so called 'first date' but I ended up messing everything.

I knew I was somehow at fault because I never told them but deep inside, I was hoping that they will at least understood.

*Did I really give them so much hard time that they were acting like these towards me?*

An hour had passed but no one stood up. I know they were hungry but I guess they're more okay with getting famished rather than acknowledging my presence.

My eyes landed on my lap. I was seating on the cushion.

"Are you guys really going to ignore me like this?"

Again, no one responded.

I decided to stand up and call Yohan.

I can't give up like these easily. I not the same Jessie anymore. Ever since, I've always let everything go the way it is. But after meeting them, I feel like even my personality changed.

They've made me realize that it's okay to let people know of my existence and allow others to appreciate what I can offer. So this time, instead of just letting people go, I decided to give it a try. Because I feel like these boys are worth it.

My knuckles came in contact with Yohan's door.

"Yohan, the food's ready."

I leaned my ear to listen if there is any movement inside the room.

Then I decided to knock again.

I can even hear the beating of my heart.

I am getting nervous.

"Yohan, can I come in?" I asked but still no response. After the third knock, I decided to open the door.

I very well know that I will get into a deep shit trouble for this but I'm ready to take a risk.

I need to talk to him.

*I need him.*

My eyes closed after I smell his sweet scent.

"Yohan?"

I said as I slowly enter his room.

Like the last time, his room was so dark, the curtains are close and the room was freezing due to the air-conditioning.

My eyes landed on his figure sitting at the corner of his bed.

His cold eyes landed on me...

I gulped.

"Yohan, please... At least let me explain."

He glared at me.

My heart felt like twisting from the inside.

His eyes seem so empty and it hurts to know that I was the one who cause that emptiness.

And then I saw him smirk, and the glint on his eyes changes.

Is that betrayal that I saw?

"What? I don't need your explanation. Just leave my room please."

My tears are threatening to escape from my eyes.

I can't cry in front of him.

I don't want to seem like the same old crybaby that I am.

"I didn't mean to keep it a secret from all of you, I swear." I tried talking out to him. I took a step closer but his voice echoed inside of the room.

"I said I don't care! Leave me alone! Or better yet, leave us all alone!"

I flinched a little at the sound of his voice, his eyes fuming in anger. The hate present on his eyes is burning a hole in my heart and its killing me.

Why does it feel like it's so hard to breath?

"Yohan..." a tear finally escaped my eyes.

He turned his head away from me.

"Please leave."

I bit my lower lip to stop myself from crying more.

I slowly turned around and walked back to the door. But before I can even go out, I looked at him one last time,

"Just know that I had a good time being with you guys... And I'm sorry if you all felt betrayed but please know that it was never my intention."

I looked at him but he's not even listening.

"Yohan..."

But he didn't dare look back.

My grip on the doorknob tighten and I felt my heart crushing into pieces.

*Yes, Jessie, it still fucking hurts to be ignored but I guess you deserve it. Like always....*

After closing the door, I was startled when I saw Jake passing by.

His eyes landed on me and he seems uncomfortable so I nodded to him and went inside my room.

I don't want to put more burden with the boys.

I moved to my closet and pulled out my clothes.

I guess it's time for me to go back to where I belong.

My tears kept falling while I put my things on my luggage.

*Why does it feel like I don't even want to go?*

It was already passed midnight when I finished packing and the boys were already inside their room.

I guess this would be the best time to go to make it less awkward.

I slowly moved my things out of my room, before I closed the door, I took a quick glance on my room.

I remember how Yohan barged in my room the first time. A smile escaped my lips.

*At least I have good memories.*

Before I even reached the front door, I was taken aback when I someone came out from the kitchen.

Yohan stopped from his tracks once he saw me. His eyes landed on my bags.

For a second, I thought I saw guilt and confusion seeping through hus eyes.

"Ahmm, I'm moving back." I said as I break the silence between the two of us.

He did not respond. Instead, he just walked past me and I swear I heard my heart breaking the million time this day.

"Leave the key."

I heard him say before he went inside his room.

"Of course..." I said to myself.

I left the key on the table. Once I went out of the front door, I looked back and stared the door I just came out with.

*Those times we shared, those memories, do those doesn't really mean anything for you?*

---

# Chapter 20

**Samantha's POV**

"I never knew you guys were this trashy. I can't believe this." I said as I zip my luggage. My head shaking in disbelief.

Josh was looking at me worriedly.

"And you, young man, why did you not do anything?" I said as I glared at my boyfriend.

I knew it wasn't his fault but I'm so pissed off.

I was all out knocked out for almost three days because of this shitty period and the next thing I knew was that Jessie had already moved out the house.

So apparently, the guys found out that she's their music director and they felt betrayed.

*What stupid nonsense.*

I pulled my luggage as I went out of the room. The boys are all in the living room, all looking down on the floor aside from Jake who is kneeling down and raising his hands in the air.

That kid. I never told him to do that.

As if that gesture would keep him out of trouble.

"I was taking care of you. And I really can't say anything about it. The boys were a little upset. Yah, are you really moving out? " I heard Josh, his tone a little worried.

If I wasn't trying to prove a point in here, I swear I would have swoon over him.

*Stop that. I might give in.* I told to myself.

To get back on track, I raised my eyebrows and tried to look intimidating as possible.

"What? I thought you all don't want being betrayed? Well, no shit. I knew her secret and I never told anybody about it. Not even you!" I said as I look at him.

Josh seemed to be a little taken aback as well as the boys but right now, I don't really care.

At this time, I need to back Jessie up. The boys need to realize that the girl has a reason for not telling them.

And Jessie, she needs to know that not everything is her fault.

I know I'm being unfair by taking sides but I can't let their relationship be messed up just because of this.

"Yah, Jake!" I said as I looked at my younger brother.

"Noona." he said, showing his puppy eyes.

*Don't fall for it, Samantha.*

"That won't work on me. I expected a lot from you Jake. You should have stayed by her side when I cannot." I looked at him a little disappointed. "And put down your hands and sit down. You're not some kid."

Though I'm a little mad, I don't have the heart to see my brother having a hard time like that.

"Why?"

I looked around after I heard what Yohan had asked. He looked at me a little confuse.

My eyes soften upon seeing his state.

*I can't believe this guy.*

He's trying to act all tough but he seemed to be the most affected among all the boys. Of course I noticed how he pays attention to her.

*He likes her, like, really really like.*

"Why did you not tell us?" he seemed a little hurt.

"Yohan oppa, I hope you realize that it is not my story to tell."

"Yah, hyung, then why are not mad at noona? She knows but she didn't tell us. You should all be mad to her as well." Jake piped in.

*This two-faced kid.*

I looked at him as he grinned at me.

"That's right Jake. Yah, Min Yohan, admit it, you have a thing with my girlfriend. I hate you."

I tried not to laugh at what Josh had said. I don't even know why he's always jealous with Yohan.

"Shut up old man. We both know how she's almost a sister and a best friend to me."

"Best friend my ass." my eyes went wide at what Josh had said. The guys look taken aback as well.

I guess Josh was serious about getting jealous with Yohan. I put a mental note to talk to him about it.

"Stop it, you kids. That is not the point here. " I turned back to Yohan. "Were you hurt because she did not trust you with her secret? What are you guys, her father? And you Yohan, her boyfriend?"

"No, I---ahmmm,-" I look at Yohan who looked in the ground looking like a lost kid. The boys doing the same.

"She still lied." Yohan concluded, though his voice seemed like he was a little unsure.

*So he's trying to stick to what he believed in, huh?*

"I can't believe you people." I said before pulling my bags out.

I'm going to stay with Jessie in the meantime.

After opening the door, I was startled when I realized that Jessie was standing in front of the door, a box of cake on her hand.

*Oh shit. She heard everything.*

Once she saw me, she tried to show her smile but of course, I noticed her swollen eyes.

"Unnie! Let's eat this cake with the boys!" she said as she tried to act cheerful.

My heart ached for the girl.

But then again, I felt a little proud in seeing her making an effort.

I moved along with her as she pulled me back in the unit and put the cake down on the table.

Before Jessie can even move to get some plates, Yohan stood up from his seat and Jessie stood frozen on her place.

I stare as they both look at each other.

Yohan looked confused. His eyes lost it's color. He looked like he was hesitating on something.

My eyes landed on Jessie and saw her hands shaking.

The boys all looked at the two, not daring to interrupt the silent communication that was surely happening.

The room was silent and the beating of their hearts are loud enough for my sensitive ears.

Somehow, my chest tightens at the sight in front of me.

They seemed to be two people whose almost ready to fall in love with each other but is unsure how to proceed.

*A girl who's been broken a lot of times but is struggling to stand tall on her own...*

*And a guy who's standing up full of pride but is afraid to bow a little and stretch his arm to reach the hands of the struggling girl before him.*

"Yohan..." Jessie tried to break the silence. Her voice a little shaky and somehow, a sharp pain cut my heart inside.

Yohan flinched at the sound of her voice, he looked like he was struggling internally but in the end, his decision ended up to be something that is not good for the both of them,

He went back inside his room.

*This idiot.*

Soon, the rest of the boys followed except for Josh and Jake who was smiling apologetically to Jessie.

I saw Jessie's lips quiver.

"Hey, let's go out. I really need to buy something. By the way, I'm moving in with you." I gently pulled her out of the house to stop her from possibly crying.

*The girl had cried enough.*

I swear to God; I will oppose real hard when Min Yohan realized how he badly needed this girl in his life. I'll make sure to make his life harder before he can win Jessie.

And I'm hoping he realize it soon because this girl is one of a kind.

---

# Chapter 21

**Jessie's POV**

"You need to pause a little on that part, Yohan. Again!" I said as we try to record their last song for this comeback.

It's been a week since the incident with Yohan and the others, and not a single soul gave me a chance to explain.

Samantha unnie had been staying with me ever since.

There's no point in staying at their dorm when every human being inside that unit hates me.

Well, except for Josh and Jake and that's mainly because of Samantha unnie.

Rome kept on glaring at me.

Haiden doesn't even give me a smile.

Jason doesn't even spare a glance while Vash simply ignores my existence.

I can't say I've given up.

I tried to reach out to them multiple times and I'm thankful for Samantha unnie is still letting me even if I know for sure how pathetic I have been making myself.

Every day, I feel like I'm getting smaller and smaller and the remaining self-esteem that I have on myself is even slowly fading.

Samantha unnie may not be saying anything about it though I was sure there was pity in her eyes.

As for Yohan, the only time I see him is everytime they recorded.

I tried to talk to him but it feels like talking to a wall.

Somehow, they were doing a great job in making me feel like I don't exist, and it fucking hurts every time.

It feels like there was a knife on my chest.

They have been recording for two days and everything was a mess.

The boys are messing up on purpose and not listening to anything I've got to say as their music director, and everyone around the office is feeling the tension.

*I get it. They just met me so it's easy to keep their distance but to me, it hurts like hell.*

They're the closest to family to me. Every moment I've spent with them had been the most beautiful moments of my life, but I guess it isn't the case for them.

For once, I thought I've found friends, but I guess they are just a bunch of wonderful people passing by.

I know it's my fault for not telling them but I hope they realize that it's my job and I've been doing it even before I personally get acquainted with them.

Besides, I was never confident in telling people about what I do. In fact, I don't usually have someone to tell these things with, until they came.

Above all this, Yohan is being a real bastard.

Yesterday, when he was doing his part on the song, he kept on the glaring in the glass like he can actually see me.

"Again!" I said, my voice getting stern every moment.

This guy is starting to piss me off.

My blood boils a lot more when I saw him roll his eyes.

But again, I can't do anything about it.

"Yohan, please..." I pleaded.

I was so sure the people behind me are getting awkward.

Besides, my voice is no longer masked. What's the point when they already know who I am. But the people with me are confused as fuck.

"What?" he said, in a mocking tone.

"Would it be easier if I stay out so you can record comfortably?" I sigh in defeat.

If that's what would it take for this song to finish, I don't even care anymore.

I feel like my presence is slowly killing their passion and I don't want that to happen.

"That would be nice."

*Fuck.*

I was expecting that but hearing it from him hurts a lot more than when I was beaten up. Somehow, I'd rather want to be beaten up again by those girls rather face the wrath of these boys.

*This is why I don't want to get close to people.*

"Okay." I said in defeat. Then I turned around to the people behind me and gave instructions. Though confused, they didn't ask any questions.

"Yohan, Mr. Kang will take over until it's time for all of you to record. I'll stay out first."

I saw him rolled his eyes but he did not respond.

I took my mask before going out. The faster I go, the faster they can finish the song.

After stepping out of the room, I leaned my back on the wall and slid down on the floor, so now, I ended up sitting with my legs crossed. I covered my face with a mask and had my black cap down covering my entire face.

Today, I decided to wear my usual black ripped pants and a black jumper, and I paired my outfit with a red converse. Since it's a little cold, I decided to wear a coat.

I pulled out my phone and quickly listened to my playlist.

*That's right. Make yourself busy Jessie. That way, it would hurt less. I told to myself.*

But then images of me being with them started to flash on my head. My chest begins to tighten.

*Get a grip Jessie. You can't cry here.*

I shifted from my position as I folded my knee and try to hide my face behind it, my arms hugging my knees in the process.

I don't even care if people walking along the pathway are looking at me weirdly.

After an hour, I felt the door beside me opened and one of the staffs came out. I removed my mask and shove it inside my coat.

"We're taking a short break. Afterwards, it'll be the whole group and we'll do some finishing touches."

I looked back to the staff and saw how he seemed uncomfortable.

Just then I realized how the people around us may be getting uncomfortable about this fucked up situation.

A sigh escaped my lips.

I stood up from my seat and bowed a little to him. "I think it's best for me to go. You can tell Mr. Kang to take over from here. I'll go ahead and listen to the tapes once they're done." I bowed one last time before I went out.

I pulled the mask inside the pocket of my coat and covered my face again.

I don't want to see any of the boys from now.

But then luck may not be on my side because just about after I turned into a corner, my face hit straight into someone's chest.

"Awww" I said as I touch my face.

*Damn. That was one hard chest.*

"Where are you going?" I looked up and saw Josh smiling at me, behind him are the boys. Again, only Jake was acknowledging my presence.

"Home." I simply said as I try to pry my way pass them but Jake quickly pulled me gently by the arm getting me back to my place.

"What?" I asked them.

"It's recording time. Are you ditching on us? That's not really good." Jake pouted.

Confusion flooded on my eyes and before I knew it, Jake had turned my body around and gently pushed me back to the recording studio.

The next thing I knew was me sitting down on my usual spot, light opened and the boys gawking in front of me over the glass wall.

This would be the first time that we will be recording with them seeing me.

It feels weird.

Before we can even start, I was startled to hear Yohan's voice.

"You're still here?" his voice too cold, I felt my body shivered. My body went frozen in place. I felt a sharp pain across my chest.

"Yah, Min Yohan..." Josh nudged him a little.

"What? It's either I go out of this booth or she stays out of this room. It's between the two."

I felt my chest tighten. My hands started shaking a little and I feel like my blood is being drained from my body.

*Do you hate me this much?* I wanted to ask Yohan that but I refrain myself.

"The truth is, I'm not really comfortable recording with her right now." I heard Rome added.

"Yah, everything seems awkward." Haiden muttered.

*You heard that? Nobody wants you Jessie.*

I guess I'm back to being alone, the same pathetic Jessie that I am.

I have lived more than twenty years of my life without them, for sure, I can manage another twenty of that.

*But can I?*

*Why does it feel like every happy moment that I had experience these past few weeks were being exchanged with something more heartbreaking in just a matter of days?*

Why is life so cruel to me?

This felt more painful than when I was bullied or when someone cut my wrist.

*Do I really deserve this?*

*Am I really this pitiful?*

Tears slowly streamed down my face.

I can't control this any longer and I feel like my heart is about to burst.

All the emotions that I've bottled up these past few days had been sinking in a deep shit hole inside of me.

"Guys, I think it would be best if we continue this some other time?" I heard Mr. Kang. He seemed unsure on what to do.

Somehow, I felt apologetic to them because they are in between me and the boys.

"Tss. Sure, we will." Yohan coldly replied.

Just then, all of VOELEVARD stood up and slowly went their way out but before that, I guess it's best to settle everything this instant.

"I never lied." I started and they seemed to stopped after what I said.

That gave me hope.

"Jessie noona..." I heard Jake muttered.

A weird laugh escaped my lips.

"So what if I am your music director? Is that reason good enough for all of you to act unprofessional towards these people who are all staying out late away from their family?"

I started wiping the tears away from my face but they can't seem to stop.

I balled my hands from my side. It was too tight, I'm afraid my fingernails are cutting my skin in the process.

"Fine. Let's all do this." I told them. "Let's all make your fans wait or you can just do whatever you all want. I'm tired of this shit anyways." I stood up from my seat and started getting my way out of the door.

My knees are shaking after all these dramas but I need to leave this place in instant.

One of the staffs quickly made her way towards me.

"Miss Jessie, are you okay?" I nodded in response.

*I've cried enough.*

I have been broken enough, not once but a lot of times. I've stumbled and fall, all in hard ground. I may have looked like weak but then again, I would get back up, every fucking single time.

*So I guess this is goodbye...*

---

# Chapter 22

**Samantha's POV**

"Hey, don't you guys think we should be reporting this to the police already?" Rome paced back and forth as he bites his index finger.

We are sitting inside Jessie's living room waiting for her to comeback.

It has been a week and the boys had been camping out of her house wishing that they'll see her.

The truth is, Jessie had texted me and told me that she went home to his father. She asked me not to tell the boys.

Like hell I would. I was so upset with them.

I looked at their faces. They fucked up real hard, especially Yohan.

I heard from the staff what happened and my heart ached for Jessie.

She doesn't deserve any of this.

Somehow, I feel like Jessie's words finally knocked some sense to them.

And now they seemed to realized how much of a dickfaced bastard they have been to her.

"I missed her." I looked at Vash who was hugging Jason while they all lie on the floor. The cushion was occupied by Yohan, Josh and Haiden.

"Me too." Jason chimed in.

"What hypocrites." I muttered.

"Yah, noona!" I raised an eyebrow at Jake.

"What?"

"Why are you even upset to me and Josh hyung as well? We didn't anything." he pouted.

I snickered at what he said.

"That's because you two were afraid of me. But if not for me, I'm sure you two would do the same."

I rolled my eyes on them.

"Samantha, you know where she is, tell us because we're worried." Josh added.

"I won't tell you because I hate every single one of you. I think it'll be best if Jessie won't be seeing any of you from now on."

Yohan's eyes landed on me and I swear he was scared for a moment.

"Ah, why?" Vash stubbornly said.

"You never let her explain, not once. Did any of you actually tried to listen to her or hear her story?" I raised my eyebrows at them.

After what happened, I did not talk to them until yesterday because I was so pissed off.

They looked at the ground after what I said.

"You all just went and sassed your way out of this mess which she doesn't deserve even one bit. Why did you actually do that?" I asked. Honestly, I was so curious.

"I don't even know what hit me." I looked at Haiden who was looking so depressed.

Out of all the boys, he's the most cheerful and it shocked me a little to know that he's a part this drama.

"Is it because we were shocked to know that the person who'd been giving us a hard time was actually her?" Jason asked.

*What bullshit.* I told to myself.

"Perhaps. Because she's so kind and shy which is totally different when we were recording. She's a monster when she's in that room." Vash added.

"But it's her job." Josh piped in. "Remember how you all get mad if we disturb you when you're doing music? What's the difference between that?"

The boys nodded at what Josh said.

"Music changes a lot of things. In her case, she's not simply Jessie when it comes to music. She's a genius." Jake added

"Actually, it was never her obligation to tell any of you. What she does is part of her job and she's been doing that even before you all personally met her. And how do you expect her to tell you when all you say after recording was that your music director is this and that." I exclaimed.

These truths had been giving pain not only to Jessie but to me as well. It pains me to know that somehow, these boys are changing and I don't want that. They can change, but only for the better.

"But still, she could have told us so we were not so clueless about it." Jason replied.

"So what, so you can all react like this?" I bit my lip in frustration. "What if I tell you guys that she indeed planned to tell you?"

They all looked at me confused.

I laughed a little. "She did. But she was afraid that you'll end up hating her. Touché. Because you all indeed had proven her that what she was thinking was right. Didn't you all notice how vulnerable she is? She can't trust people easily. That's why she can't even go out this unit without covering her face."

Silence covered the room.

"And then you did those horrible things to her. As far as I know, you were the first ones to be able to successfully enter her life. Everyone in Healing Heart Entertainment knows she doesn't talk to people unless it was work related."

"I feel so stupid." Rome sat on the floor.

"Me too. She'd been nothing but an angel and to think that she really put an effort these past few days for us but we just ignored her." Vash sighed.

My eyes landed at Yohan who never said anything.

"Yohan..." I called him.

Once he looked up, a lot of emotions was seeping through his eyes. Is it regret? Or was is guilt or worry?

"Is it because you feel that she didn't trust you enough to tell you? Or was it because you were hoping that she'd at least tell you because you two has a connection?"

He messed up his hair as he sighs in frustration.

"You feel miserable, right? You all deserved it anyway. And don't bother looking for her. She went home." I told them before I move back to my room not sparing a glance even to my boyfriend.

"Oh, by the way. I heard she withdraw being your music director since yesterday. Mr. Kang told me and he's so pissed off about it. Did you know that they never liked Jessie before until the girl had proven them wrong? She earned the respect that she deserved but you all ruin that. Congratulations."

I left them all mouth hanging wide open in shock.

*Good.*

I hope their heart crush into pieces. They deserve it.

---

# Chapter 23

**Yohan's POV**

My eyes squinted as I stare at the top of the ceiling. I'm inside my music studio, lying on the sofa situated just beside the door.

Normally, I would only be doing music when I'm inside this room but now, I don't have any energy or even motivation to do so.

I left the unit earlier this morning as the boys were getting a little grumpy. Samantha's attitude towards us isn't helping us all either.

A sigh escaped my lips after remembering Jessie's face, how her body was shaking both in anger and disappointment towards us, especially me.

"Aissst!" I sat down on the cushion, unable to decide what to do.

It has been a week and it is bothering me so much.

I fucked up real hard and I don't even know how to fix this mess,

Not only did I hurt her really bad but our schedules are now at stake.

We were unable to finish our recording because we cannot focus. Plus, Jessie is no longer around, Mr. Kang doesn't seem to really like the idea of him deciding solely for the output. And we all know it's mostly my fault.

I shouldn't have mixed personal problems with work.

To be honest, I was a little disappointed to know that she was our music director but I can't seem to be able to pinpoint why.

Is it because I feel like she doesn't trust me enough?

Was I jealous because she seemed to be more musically inclined than me?

But I was never that jealous type. I mean, I know I'm not perfect and there are other people who are far better than I am when it comes to producing music.

"Ahh, I don't even know!!!" I said as I messed with my hair.

To be honest, I got a little scared when Samantha said that Jessie already withdraws being our music director. I'm not afraid of losing her as that, but somehow, I'm getting scared with the thought that I might not be able to see her anymore after this.

A week without her made me really grumpy and sensitive about everything. I normally just sleep during my free time but I can't seem to get some lately because all I think about is her.

Every time I try to close my eyes, her crying image flashes in front of me. I feel really guilty and I feel ashamed for being the reason why she had been lonely these days.

Of course, I knew that she's been crying since I found out her secret. Her eyes are always swollen. That night when I saw her carrying her luggage, I wanted to hug her real tight and apologize but I was so stupid.

Then I heard my doorbell ringing.

My brows furrowed. I have double soundproof doors so I needed to have a doorbell outside.

I slowly stood up from my seat and moved to open the door.

"Choi PD wants to see us." I groan after what Rome had said.

I looked at him and realized how in great trouble we are since Choi PD decided to show up. Lately, Choi PD no longer meddle with our stuff because he trusted us but I guess we really need some help right now.

I closed the door of my studio and followed Rome.

"I miss her."

I did not respond at what Rome had said. We very well knew what he is talking about and like me, they have been feeling guilty.

We entered the studio, the very same room where everything had happened and we saw Choi PD, the rest of the boys, Mr. Kang and the other staffs around.

*Wow, a full house.* I thought to myself.

Once seated, Choi PD cleared his throat.

"So, I guess you all know why we're gathered here today." he started.

My head hung low as well as the boys.

Haiden was fidgeting on the side.

"You were supposed to have your comeback after two months but since the song isn't even finished yet, our choreography isn't finish as well. The timetable that we have had been useless so we need to move everything forward."

Not a single soul responded.

"And I'm sure you all know why."

Silence filled the room. My eyes feel like burning.

The boys had worked really hard for this, so we can see our fans soon. But now, it's not only the fans that are disappointed, Choi PD, the staffs who've worked really hard are having a hard time because of our immaturity.

Because I am not sure about myself.

"Mr. Kang, how is the song going?" He asked.

I saw Mr. Kang scratch the back of his head, unable to respond.

"What will you all do of Jessie is no longer around? Won't you all be able to handle the final production of the music unless she approved it?" Choi PD sound a little frustrated all the more I felt guilty because they shouldn't be having problems with these if not for me.

"What do you plan to do next?"

Again, no one responded. Or nobody has the guts to do so.

"Rome..."

"Yes, Pd-nim." Rome looked up.

"I am so disappointed with your whole group."

My hands were on the top of my knees but I can't help but ball them in a fist.

*This is all my fault.*

Rome is unable to answer. Deep inside, he knows he's a part of this too.

"Josh, you're the oldest. Why did you not do anything?"

"And you Haiden, I expect you to at least not let them do these things" Haiden was already shaking.

Once in a while, these meeting happens. Not mainly to scold us but for us to realize what's happening and to make sure we are still on the right path.

"And you Yohan..." I looked up and saw the disappointment in his eyes.

I felt like a hundred needles started piercing through my heart. I automatically looked down as I felt the tears on my eyes started streaming down my face.

*What have we done?*

Soon enough, all of the boys were also crying.

I heard a sigh escaped on Choi PD's lips.

"We're not talking here because we want to blame all of you for what's happening. We hire people to fix these kinds of problems and we don't really care of we lose some money. Remember, your music isn't just about that. Your music moves beyond."

I wipe the tears falling down my cheeks.

"This is not even about Jessie anymore. This is all about you guys. What's happening?"

"I'm sorry pd-nim. This is actually all my fault." I muttered.

Rome interjected. "No. It's not just your fault. We're a part of it. We did the same to her and I'm ashamed of myself for doing those when the messages that we want to convey through our songs fits to her situation."

Again, silence fill the room. Only the sound of our sniffing can be heard.

"I can see that you're all reflecting with your actions." he started. "I hope that whatever misunderstandings that you guys and Jessie have, you'll be able to resolve it."

"But PD-nim, Jessie went home to her family and she already withdraw being our music director, how can we apologize to her?" Jason looked worried.

I looked up expectantly.

"Are you really sorry about what happened?" he asked.

All of us started nodding. A smile formed at the corner of his lips and my brows furrowed at that. Choi PD seemed to know something.

"Don't worry, Jessie will always be a part of Healing Heart Entertainment so you'll surely have a dozens of chance to apologize to her. But now, I want you to finish the remaining parts of your last song." he said.

That's a signal that out meeting has ended.

We all stood up as the other staff made their way out of the room. Before Choi PD walks out, we all bowed to him and thanks him for his guidance. Soon, only the seven of us was left on the room.

After a few minutes, I heard Mr. Kang's voice.

"Yohan, you'll go first."

"Yes." I said as I wipe the tears on my cheeks.

It's a good thing that my voice isn't shaking.

The rest of the boys sat on the couch inside the recording studio and like before, the glass in front was tinted.

Once I heard the music, I started doing my part.

I'm a little motivated after that pep talk. I will do this for our fans, for the boys and of course, for her.

The music stopped and I waited for Mr. Kang's feedback. The boys were also listening expectantly.

"Good job Yohan. Now, I want you to do the next part and make sure not to do it a little too fast"

My eyes went wide open after hearing the voice echoing in the room.

The boys looked startled as well as they stood up from their seat.

And then the light on the other side of the tinted glass lit up and we saw Samantha standing behind Jessie who was sitting down on the same spot that she had last time.

"Hey, Jessie!!!!" the boys ran outside the booth after seeing her but I stayed on my seat as I looked into her eyes.

A smile spread on my face as I mouthed the words that I've been dying to tell her for over a week already.

"I'm sorry."

A relieved sigh escaped on my lips when I saw her smile at me.

And I laugh after I saw the boys barge in the room and hug the girl real tight.

Samantha was smacking them real hard for pancaking her.

All the more I have the motivation to do better.

I'll make sure to make it up to her everyday onwards.

Once the boys had calmed down, I heard her voice again and my heart fluttered for a moment.

"Let's do this?" her beautiful face was gazing on me.

*God, I miss her so much.*

I flashed my gummy smile on her and showed her a thumbs up.

*Now that you're here, of course, we can do this.*

---

# Chapter 24

**Jessie's POV**

"Are you sure you don't want to visit the boys?" Samantha unnie had asked.

I looked at her as I pet my dog Kuma. A smile tugged at the corner of my lips when Kuma started wiggling his tail.

After a few minutes, I stood up from the ground and faced Samantha unnie.

I told her where I am and of course, she had already been here once. I saw her before as he talks with my stepdad but she never saw me that time.

"I'm not really sure I'm still welcome there." A bitter smile escaped my lips. "They hate me."

I sat on the empty chair beside her. We are on the garden at the back of the house.

She looked like she was hesitating about something.

"Is there anything wrong?" I asked worriedly.

My brows furrowed as I watch her bit her bottom lip.

My hands landed on my open mouth, "Oh my God, are you pregnant?" I asked and her eyes widen. Soon enough, her left hand landed on my arm.

"What, No! stupis." she said in panic and I laughed. A sigh of relief escaped within me.

Not that I would oppose but that will be too much to handle not only for her, Josh oppa and all the boys as well.

She looked at me, her arms crossed in front of her chest and I jerk my head backwards as I continue to laugh.

*She looks so cute.*

"Sorry." I said as she glared at me but I'm still trying to stop myself from bursting into fits of laughter. "What were you saying?"

"So, I wanted to tell you how miserable the boys had been after you left to the point that Haiden and Vash had set up a tent in front of your door. It was really weird I had to kick their asses so they would go home."

A sad smile formed into my face as I feel my heart beat dropping a little.

"Stop lying." I told her.

The boys won't be sad because of me. They hate me.

I appreciate her efforts on making me feel better but I've come to accept the fact that I will always be alone. The same loner Jessie, that's who I am.

I looked down as I play the hem of my shirt but my eyes went back to her as I heard something ringing through the speaker of her phone, which, by the way, she just put at the top of the table.

"What are you doing?" I asked her as the ringing of her phone defies the silence filling our surroundings but she just ushered me to keep quiet.

My breath hitches when I heard Josh oppa's voice.

"Yah Samantha!!! Aren't you being too much? Why did you leave without telling me where you'll go? Do you really want to see me die of worry? Yah, how can you do this to me? Just because you know I love you to death doesn't mean you can treat me like this. Wait, where are you? Are you no----"

"Yah, Josh!!!!! Aissst! Will you stop for a second? " Samantha unnie immediately cut him off as Samantha unnie looked at me shyly.

I had to cover my mouth to stop myself from laughing. They really are so cute.

"No. I'm not going to stop because I am so upset. I swear ---"

"Josh."

"to God, your brother keeps on telling me how I'm starting to have----"

"Josh"

"wrinkles. Me? The Worldwide handsome? No, we???!! huh? Wh----"

Samantha unnie's left hand landed on her forehead.

"Kim Josh!"

I can no longer take it.

I burst into fits of laughter, I had ti grab my stomach for support.

The line went silent.

"Yah, Samantha, is that Jessie?"

"No." Samantha grimaced. "I'm ending the call. Don't talk to me."

And she did end the call.

"Yah, why did you do that?" I asked her, still smiling. She looked pissed off.

She waves her hands off.

"Don't mind him. He's just being weird."

I rolled my eyes when I saw a smile tugging from the corner of her lips and her face blushing.

"Oh God, you're blushing." I chuckled.

"He's so sweet and adorable, right?" she said giving up and I nodded, agreeing on what she said.

"Anyways, you need to go to the office at two. Your father has something important to tell you."

My eyes went wide open.

"And you're telling me that now?" I stood from my seat as I looked at my watch. It's past one!

I quickly run back to my room leaving her laughing her ass off.

I took a quick shower and wore a black ripped jeans and a white Gucci crop top my stepdad had given me as a gift.

I pulled out my Timberlands and leave my hair down.

After checking myself in front of the mirror, I decided to grab my black choker and wear it.

I then grab my purse, my black cap and as always, my mask.

I run my way back to Samantha unnie who's now playing with Kuma.

After seeing me, she quickly stood up.

"Rocking the Gucci outfit, I see." she raised her eyebrow.

"What?" I just shrugged my shoulder.

"Let's go." and we quickly went to the office on her car.

Once we came inside, we saw a full house meeting inside the studio including the boys.

"What's happening?" I asked Samantha unnie, a little confused.

We were the only ones outside the booth. I saw Samantha unnie pushing some buttons so we can now hear everything.

My knees gave in once I realized the pain looked on their faces, especially the boys. And of course, Yohan.

"This is not even about Jessie anymore. This is all about you guys. What's happening?"

*What are they talking about?*

The hairs at the back of my neck all stood up and my hands where getting sweaty.

"I'm sorry pd-nim. This is actually all my fault." Yohan muttered.

Rome interjected. "No. It's not just your fault. We're a part of it. We did the same to her and I'm ashamed of myself for doing those when the messages that we want to convey through our songs fits to her situation."

*Are they talking about me?*

I covered my mouth as I stop myself from crying.

"I can see that you're all reflecting with your actions." I heard my stepdad said. "I hope that whatever misunderstandings that you guys and Jessie have, you'll be able to resolve it."

"But PD-nim, Jessie went home to her family and she already withdraw being our music director, how can we apologize to her?" Jason looked worried.

*I'm here and I'm sorry for not telling you guys too.* I told to myself.

"Are you really sorry about what happened?" my stepdad asked.

And I smile as all of them started nodding.

"Don't worry, Jessie will always be a part of Healing Heart Entertainment so you'll surely have a dozens of chance to apologize to her. But now, I want you to finish the remaining parts of your last song." he said.

Soon enough, they all stood up as the other staffs made their way out of the room. Before my stepdad walks out, I smile as they all bowed to him and thank him for his guidance.

After a few minutes, I'm not facing with seven precious boys in front of me and I was startled to see them wiping the tears on their faces.

I turned to Samantha unnie.

"I told you."

I mouthed a "thank you" to her.

After a few minutes, Mr. Kang and my Dad came in.

"Dad." I said as I move towards him and hugged him real tight.

"Are you okay now?" he said as he wipes the tears I didn't notice was streaming down my face.

"They don't hate me, Dad." I told him.

He then smiled at me. "Of course. They love my baby."

"Yohan, you'll go first." I looked around as I heard Mr. Kang's voice.

"So, are you sure you longer want to do this?" he asked me sincerely.

I knew he would accept it if I said I no longer want this.

I turned around and scanned the faces of these seven boys in front of me.

And it just hit me.

*Nope. Never going to leave these precious boys alone.*

I smiled at my stepdad.

"I got this, Dad." I said as I hug him tighter before letting go.

Once the music started and Yohan started singing, a smile tugged on the corner of my lips.

Once it ended, I stare at him as he tries to catch his breath, looking through the glass wall as if he can see me.

The boys were also listening expectantly.

I smiled at Mr. Kang informing him that I'll take over and I felt at ease after I saw him smile.

A long sigh escaped my lips.

*This is it.*

"Good job Yohan. Now, I want you to do the next part and make sure not to do it a little too fast" I told him and I laughed to myself as I saw his eyes wide open.

The boys looked startled as well as they stood up from their seat.

I flicked the light open so the tinted glass lit up and they saw me sitting on the very same spot where they first saw me as their music director.

"Hey, Jessie!!!!" the boys ran outside the booth after seeing me but Yohan stayed on his seat as he looked into my eyes.

My heart started beating like crazy.

His face got thinner but he's still fucking handsome. I give him that.

A smile spread on his face and I saw him mouthed something.

"I'm sorry."

That's it.

I smiled at him.

The door behind me opened and I saw Yohan laugh at the boys while they all hug me real tight.

"Haiden, wait..." I told him, "I can't breathe." As I try to pry his hands off my neck.

Samantha unnie was smacking them real hard for pancaking me.

Once the boys had calmed down, I looked at Yohan.

"Let's do this?" I asked him sweetly.

*God, I miss him so much.*

He flashed his gummy smile on me and thumbs up.

After three hours, the boys ended the last recording.

"Okay, this is a wrap and we'll do this from here. You can now go home and take a rest" I told them.

I bowed to Mr. Kang and the rest of the staffs.

Samantha unnie went to my stepdad's office.

A smile spread on my face as I exited the room.

The boys and their manager are still having a meeting in the room so I decided to go myself.

Since I don't have anything to do, I decided to go home.

Our house is actually not too far away from here so I decided to walk.

I pulled out my headset and listened to my playlist. And of course, my face still covered with a mask.

I was half way to our house when I pulled put my phone but I was startled when my eyes caught the attention of the reflection of seven sneaky boys who were following me.

I laugh to myself as I continue walking.

Once I reached the house, I entered the gate and leave it open so the boys can come in.

They have been here before but again, since I'm anti-social, I never left my room whenever they are here.

I went to the kitchen to grab a glass of water as I try to listen if they already went inside.

"Maybe they have something to talk about." I heard Haiden said.

"Where is she anyways?" Jason said.

"Hey, Choi PD will scold us for barging in." Jake muttered.

"Oh, Hello Choi PD!" I heard them exclaimed.

*So, my dad is already home huh?*

That's when I decided to meet them.

I guess it's high time they learn everything about me, right?

"Hi Dad!" I greeted my dad. Then I greeted the boys. "Hi."

Again, their mouth hanging wide open.

"Dad?"

*They weren't shock, right?*

---

# Chapter 25

**Jessie's POV**

"Hey, if you make my daughter cry one more time, I swear I will let Kuma run around and chase you."

I laugh as my dad scold the boys who are now all sitting in the living room.

It looks so funny and cool at the same time.

If I had known that my dad is actually like this, I should have invited people at our house before. My school life could have been different.

*He looked so cool.*

"But Choi PD, how come we never saw Jessie here before? We always visit you these past few years.? Haiden asked.

"That's right. I never saw her even once." Vash added.

"I was here all these time." I shyly admitted.

"Huh?" the boys looked shocked.

I laughed at their reactions.

"Remember one time when Haiden oppa screamed about seeing a ghost upstairs?"

"Shoot, that was you?" he stood up pointing at me and I just nodded. "I almost peed on my pants when I thought a ghost had walked past the hallway!"

The boys started laughing.

"And that time Jason got so scared after thinking some stranger or thief had entered the kitchen when you had a sleepover? That was me on my mask."

Jason's mouth went wide open.

"I almost died of heart attack that time!" Jason clutched his chest as if remembering what happened.

"So, that was probably you playing the piano upstairs every time?"

I looked at Yohan after I heard him talk.

I smiled at him and nodded.

After what happened earlier, I feel so relieved.

"Whoa! This is too much to take in." Rome exclaimed as he stood up from his seat, accidentally hitting the vase on the table.

"Oops." Rome muttered after the vase crashed on the floor.

"Yah, Rome!" Josh oppa smacks Rome's arm.

The boys immediately stood up and bowed to my father who only shake his head in disbelief.

"I swear to God Rome, one of these days, I will ask you to pay everything that you've broken." My father just smiled.

"Pd-nim" Rome scratched the back of his head.

It looked so cute. They seemed so afraid but my father just laughed.

Soon enough, the boys started playing inside the house while my father already went up to his room.

The boys where having a lot of fun like how they used to whenever they are here so I decided to go out on the backyard.

"So you're actually a Bang?" I looked around after I heard Yohan's voice from behind.

The boys were shocked after they found out that Choi PD was my father.

He stopped a few feet away from where I stand.

I hugged myself after I felt the coldness of the wind flew past before me.

Before I can even respond, I felt a fabric landed on my shoulders.

I looked around and noticed that Yohan had given me his jacket.

"Yah, you'll get a cold." I said as I remove the jacket that he'd placed above my shoulders but I felt his hands stopping me.

"Don't." he stopped my hand and quickly fixed the jacket on me.

I flinched as his body touched mine. The sudden contact made my heart flutter.

My eye closed as I smell his perfume.

*He smells so good.*

My eyes flew open when I heard him chuckle.

*Shoot. Did he caught me sniffing him?*

I looked down in embarrassment.

"I'm sorry." he said breaking the silence between us.

A smile slowly tugged from the corner of my lips.

"It's okay. Let's forget about it." I told him as I stare at the dark night before me.

The sky looks beautiful.

"You know what's beautiful about the night sky?" I started. "It's dark and pitch black but the lights coming from the stars are calming. It gives hope that even when darkness succumbs, those little lights altogether makes the difference."

He did not respond to what I said.

"You know what's beautiful about the night sky? It's the fact that you are still standing beautifully under it, appreciating the little things around you even after all the bad things that happened during the bright sky."

I turned around at what he said.

"What-ahm what do you mean?" I stuttered.

*Great Jessie, good job on making yourself look stupid.*

"Look, I really just want to apologize. I know I've been an ass and I hurt you really bad. I'm really really sorry." he said as he looked at me in the eyes.

"Yah, it's okay. I get it. You don't have to apologize." I told him as I wave my hands.

I'm really bad at this type of confrontations.

"No. It's not okay." he said as he walks towards me.

I was startled at what he said.

"It's not always okay. You don't always have to pretend that everything is alright. You can't always keep it inside." he told me as he grabbed my arms.

"What are you saying?"

"Get angry at me. Be mad. Yell all you want." he smiled at me reassuringly. "You are entitled to show your emotions as well. You can't always keep it to yourself."

"Yohan...." my heart felt restless at what he said.

Soon enough, the images of what happened these past few days flashed before me and again, the pain that I felt all those times filled within my heart and started building within me.

And then, tears started streaming down my face.

All the hurt that I keep inside, it all started to go down before me.

I felt his arms wrapped around my body and I hugged him back.

"It's okay not to be okay sometimes Jessie. Tell me everything. All the pain that you've been keeping, share it with me." I looked into his eyes and he looked so sincere.

"I hate you." I said as I balled my fist.

"Why did you hurt me?" I started hitting his chest as my tears stream down my face.

"Am I that pathetic to all of you?"

I gritted my teeth in frustration. The pain that I have been bottling up about to explode.

"Why can't I be the same as everyone else? Why can't I breathe the same air as you do?"

My heart feels like it's about to burst and my throat is getting hurt.

"Why did you do that to me Yohan? Why can't I be happy?" I asked him as my face went up and try to look at him in the eyes.

I know I look like a mess right now and I probably am at my ugliest right now but I don't care. Yohan hugging me right this moment is everything to me.

"I'm sorry. You don't deserve everything. I was foolish and I shouldn't have done that to you. I'm so sorry." his hands went up as he tries to wipe the tears on my face.

"Jessie, you're great. You're a genius in your own way and you're special. Don't ever think that you're not worth it, okay?" he said and I nodded my head.

Somehow, his words brought confidence within me.

"You're beautiful and talented. You don't need to get any approval from anyone. In fact, they should be getting an approval from you." I pouted as he tucked the strands of hair that are falling behind my ear.

"Don't forget that you're the boss of your own self. You're wonderful and you deserve every little thing that you have."

I thought Yohan was the quiet one. I never thought he'd be someone who'd be this sensitive about little things and I appreciate his effort on making me feel better.

"What is this? Why are you doing this?" I asked a little confused, my tears slowly

"Because you've been bottling up everything." he looked at me worriedly. "You were shaking the entire time and that image of you keeps getting back on my mind."

I shiver as he cupped my face with his soft hands.

"But what is it to you?" I asked him.

Silence filled between us and only my heart beating can be heard across the silent night.

"Because I care for you. I haven't slept a wink after what happened between us and my heart had been restless because I know I was the reason why you were hurting." he said, his eyes began to tear up as well.

"What are you saying?" my voice cracked.

He looked at me nervously before he bites his lower lip. My eyes can't help but follow his actions.

"Can I show you instead?" he suddenly said and I nodded in confusion.

Soon enough, I noticed his face slowly moving towards mine.

My eyes went wide open and I stood frozen on his arms.

My heart started beating like a drum and my brain seemed to stop functioning.

My eyes closed after I felt his soft lips landed on mine.

His lips taste so sweet and my mouth started savoring his sweetness.

Before I even realize, my body started acting on its own and I felt his hand on the back of my head.

After a while, I felt his lips away from mine and I had to resist the urge to grab his neck and kiss him again.

"I know this one might be a shock for you but, will you be my girlfriend?" he said.

My face was burning red and the butterflies on my stomach are having a party.

*Shit. Did Min Yohan just ask me to be his girlfriend?*

"Ahmmm, I----"

"I think you might want to ask for my permission first before dating my daughter."

We both turned our heads to the opposite direction after we heard a voice.

My eyes opened in shock after seeing my father and the rest of the boys standing and gawking at us.

My hands immediately pushed Yohan away and I had to cover my face in embarrassment.

*My Dad just saw me kissing Yohan, Oh God.*

"Choi PD." Yohan bowed to my father.

I removed my hands on my face and saw the boys wiggling their eyebrows while standing at the back of my father.

"Let's talk Min Yohan. I don't think I like the idea of you eating my daughter's face without being in a relationship."

Yohan's hands landed on mine and I gripped it real hard.

"Yah, will you be okay?" I asked him.

He gulped. His eyes a little scared but he smile nonetheless.

"I will be okay. Your dad doesn't have a gun, does he?" he looked at me worriedly.

"Ahmmmm..." my eyes avoided his.

"Yah!" he said a little alarm.

"I'm joking." I laughed at him.

"Min Yohan, follow me." my father said and soon, Yohan walked rigidly following my father.

Once gone, the boys went towards my direction.

"You, sneaky little kid!" Josh oppa exclaimed.

Again, I covered my face in embarrassment.

"Are you two together?" Vash asked as he try to ory my hands away from my face.

"Yah, go away!" I said as I run towards the house laughing.

"Jessie! Tell us!" Vash run as well while the boys followed.

I grunt as I heard the boys whistling behind me.

*Why did I ever meet this silly boys?* I told to myself.

---

# Chapter 26

**Jessie's POV**

I rubbed my eyes as I walk down the stairs.

I just woke up and I'm confuse as fuck as to how I end up sleeping in my room.

The last thing I remember was me lying on the couch in the living room as Yohan and the boys talked with my father on his office.

Due to constant lack of sleep and being too exhausted these past few days, sleep had finally visited me.

And I'm not complaining.

I love sleep as much as Yohan loves it.

"Oh, good timing. Your boyfriend just went out and he prepared your breakfast."

"Yes?" my mouth hang wide open as I stare at our housekeeper.

She'd been with us ever since I was young and she's almost a grandmother to me.

"That young man with a gummy smile carried you to your room last night and went back this morning to cook you breakfast. He is surely sweet huh."

My cheeks turned red at her teasing.

We both walked towards the dining room and I saw some pancakes, hotdogs, eggs and bacon at the table.

"Did he prepare all these?" I asked in amusement.

"You got yourself a keeper." she said looking at me smiling.

I was getting overwhelm by the sudden attention.

What did my father and Yohan talked about?

My cheeks started to hurt from smiling too much but I keep on smiling anyways.

I am so happy.

I went to my seat and started devouring myself with these newly cooked food.

It was still a little hot so that means it wasn't long since Yohan went out.

"Auntie, let's eat together." I told her.

"It's okay. You can enjoy the food that your boyfriend had cooked for you." she said before leaving me alone.

I quickly grab my phone from my pocket and bent over to snap a picture of me eating the food that he prepared.

And then I send them via message to him and added a smiley.

I turned around after I heard someone coming in and immediately stood up after realizing that it was my father.

He was already dressed up for office.

"Good morning Dad." I greeted him and he just messed my already messy hair as he went to the kitchen counter to grab a glass of water.

"Aren't you going back to your unit?" he asked.

"Why Dad, don't you want me staying over?" I teased.

He chuckled as he looks at me.

"Well, I'm getting tired of seeing you too much." he joked. "But I guess I'd like you to stay here in the meantime since I noticed how cuddly you and Yohan had been. I don't want to have a grandchild this early."

"Dad!" I grunted.

"What? Imagine my shock upon seeing the two of you kissing last night. But it's fine. I've talked with him and the boys."

I just pouted at what he said.

"Aren't you having your breakfast?" I asked as I notice him walking towards the door.

"I already did. Plus, I saw Yohan preparing those foods. That might have some potions or something so I'm going to pass on that." He muttered and before I can even react, he's already out, his laugh echoing throughout the house.

I covered my face even though no one can practically see me.

Then I felt my phone buzz.

Yohan: Awww, you looked cute. See you later at the office, baby. 😙

My cheeks flushed at what he called me.

*Baby.*

I never thought someone would be calling me that, moreover, Yohan.

If his fans find out, I'm surely dead but I don't have time to think about that.

I'm getting excited just by the thought of seeing him afterwards.

I finished everything that he prepared and I was never full like this my entire life.

This food is enough to keep me from eating for at least two days.

After cleaning my mess, I quickly went up to my room to prepare so I can head to the office.

I actually need to check the final touches of their song.

I was whistling the entire time that I was taking a shower.

For once, I actually paid attention to what I'm supposed to be wearing but then I realized that almost all of my clothes are black.

I ended up wearing a black cropped top with a Rolling Stones print and a flannel skirt which I paired up with a Timberlands.

After being satisfied with my looks, I grab my pouch and headed out to the office.

Once I arrived, some staffs started greeting me which startled me a little.

I am still not used to people giving me attention.

I guess the staffs had been used to seeing me with a mask and they decided to just greet me anyways.

I quickly went inside the studio and Mr. Kang and the rest of the team greeted me. And it bothers me that they're actually all smiling.

"Sorry but, did something happened?" I asked confused.

"No." Mr. Kang laughed. "We're just glad to have you back. You don't know how much of a mess we have been without you these past few days." my cheeks blushed at what Mr. Kang said.

Never once did they complement me. I remember how rude Mr. Kang had been when I first came here as he felt threatened by my presence.

I guess the fact that I don't show myself to people had put him at ease a little.

Eventually, we all met in common grounds and had been used with each other but this is the first time they openly said things like this to me.

I quickly sat on my usual spot and started working.

After a few hours, I hears someone knocking on the door but I didn't dare to check until Mr. Kang had tapped me by the shoulders.

I removed my headphones and looked at him confused.

"Someone's looking for you." he said, a smile creeping on the corner of his lips.

I looked around and saw a delivery boy with a bouquet of roses on his hands along with a cute teddy bear.

My cheeks turned crimson red.

"Delivery for Ms. Jessie?" The delivery man said and I slowly stood up and went to get the stuffs.

"Ma'am, please sign on this paper." which I quickly did and the man bowed afterwards before he went away.

I looked at the flowers and I felt millions of butterflies playing on my stomach.

This is the first time I ever received some flowers and a stuff toy.

I feel so special right now.

My face moved closer as I smell the flowers.

I noticed a card on the side which I quickly grabbed to read.

*"I hope these flowers and teddy bear would make you smile. And though you deserve more than just flowers and teddy bears, just know that I am willing to give you the moon and the stars and even my whole world because you deserve everything. - Y"*

A chuckle escaped my lips and I can't help but tear up a little.

I have never felt this happy before.

Never once I have felt so special and these things that Yohan had been doing is getting me.

*Do I really deserve this?*

Once I entered back in the room, the staffs started teasing me while the others are whistling.

I looked down, too embarrassed.

"Miss Jessie, do you have a boyfriend?" One girl asked and I'm not even sure if I should nod or not.

I don't even remember if we are now in a relationship or not.

"Yah, stop pestering Miss Jessie. By the way, whoever the man is, he's really sweet." another girl said as they squealed together and I can't help bit giggle at the sight.

*Where is Yohan by the way?*

This day had been so weird because all the things that had happened was a first for me.

The truth is, I'm a little afraid that these might end so soon.

*Stop making my heart flutter like this, Yohan.*

---

# Chapter 27

**Yohan's POV**

"Hyung! Isn't that too much?" Haiden asked as we try to hang the strings with multiple paper cranes across Jessie's room.

"Yahh, yah, Haiden, be careful!" I screamed as Haiden almost fell from the chair he was standing with.

Good thing, Josh hyung was able to catch him in time.

"I swear to God; I will kill you Yohan hyung if I get a scratch for trying to help you surprise your girlfriend." I laugh as Haiden clutch his chest in panic after he almost fell on the ground.

"Shut up, Haiden. That's what, four feet? You won't die from that!"

Haiden's eyes went wide at what Rome had said.

"Yah, you go up here and I'll push you," Haiden exclaimed as he gagged exaggeratedly over what Rome had said.

"Stop that, will you? And you can't let Rome do that. He might end up breaking everything. I won't fold a thousand more cranes after this. I barely had any sleep." Josh muttered.

I laughed silently, thankful that he had friends to help him over.

So last night, after Choi PD has talked to me about Jessie, he made sure my intentions for her daughter were pure and true. Of course, I like her for real.

Now, the boys agreed to help me make set up Jessie's room for our date later. I haven't even told Jessie about but I am so damn excited.

*I want her to have the best first date ever.*

Last night after I saw her sleeping peacefully on the couch, I felt a tug in my heart after realizing that she must have barely gotten any sleep the past week because of what happened. I was glad to see that she was at least smiling when she was sleeping as if she was really happy.

I carried her back to her room and I had to stop the urge to stay and cuddle with her after she accidentally pulled me last night. I went home and went back in the morning to prepare her food.

The flowers and teddy bear that I've sent, she should have received it already.

A smiled crept at the corner of my lips after remembering that.

"Stop smiling like an idiot, Min Yohan. You're taking too much of our time, I hope you remember to treat us next time, okay?" I was breaking off from my trance after I heard what Josh hung had said.

"My back hurts from staying up late in helping you fold these paper cranes." Vash grunted.

"What? i never asked you to help me in the first place." i told them.

"But it's for Jessie." Jake pouted. " Just remembering the days how she's been sad because of us makes me feel guilty." he added and the other boys nodded in agreement.

"It was hyung's fault!" Haiden pouted and I threw a paper crane on him.

A yawn escaped my lips. I haven't had a good sleep since last night.

I felt so happy and excited that I had to do these things for her.

"Hyung, you do realize that doing this means there's no turning back, right?" Jake asked as he tries to climb on the other side to fix the other string of paper cranes on his hands.

"Right, hyung, do you really like her that much?" Jason asked.

They all looked at me silently, anticipating my answer.

"Hssssss" a weird sound escaped my lips, a habit I have whenever I am thinking deeply.

"Yohan hyung, you can't do this if you're not sure. You're dead to Choi PD, you should know that." Rome added.

*Of course, I know that.*

I have been thinking a lot from the first day I found out her secret.

Actually, I have been thinking since the day she told me that I was broken, the same way that she is.

The fact that she was able to see through me, that she was able to see how broken I seem to be made my heart flutter a little.

"Is it because she looked a lot like the girl in the picture? The one your wallet?" Josh stated and I knew the rest had been dying to ask the same question but was a little afraid of my reaction.

At first, I was initially pissed off because of what happened when we first met, and then I saw her face and she looked a lot like Jenna, my childhood friend.

"It wasn't like that. You all knew what and who Jenna is to me." I told them and they all nodded.

"But you can't deny the fact that they look to much alike. And if you two end up together and Jessie finds out about her, she might get the wrong idea." Rome added.

I was thinking if I paid more attention to her because she looked a lot like her, or was it because I felt something weird within me when I heard her sing.

She was singing full of emotions. I admire how easily she felt lost within the music that she's making.

And from that, I knew it wasn't because I see Jenna in her. I know because my heart beats like crazy every time I look into her eyes. I feel like my chest is about to burst every time I see her smile and my mind can't stop thinking about her, her voice always on my head.

I feel different with her and I'm not sure I don't want to lose her in my life. I can't lose someone dear in my life, not this time, not again.

I looked at them who are patiently waiting for my answer, "I want this. I want her." I muttered and they all smiled in understanding.

*Or maybe I love her already....*

---

# Chapter 28

**Jessie's POV**

"Where are you now? Are you still far from here?" I heard Samantha unnie asked for the nth time as I ran a little faster so I can reach home immediately.

And then I heard her cough. Her voice cracked and it's coming out as a whisper.

"I'm almost there," I said in panic.

I was about to go home when Samantha unnie had called me for help. She said she's not feeling well and she's having a hard time breathing.

I tried calling any of the boys but I can't reach them so here I am rushing my way to see her.

Her voice sounded so fragile and it scares me a little.

My hands reached up to the number of the floor that I was supposed to get up with but this stupid elevator seemed to be having fun on itself as it is not closing regardless of how much I tick the close button.

"Stupid elevators," I muttered. If my floor isn't so high up, I swear I would have run through the stairs.

After a while, the elevator moved and I was tapping my feet while I bite the tip of my fingers in anticipation.

"I hope she's fine." I talked to myself.

Once I reached the floor, I swear my eyes caught a pink hair passed the corner while hissing voices soon followed but I just shake the thought.

*That wasn't Jason, is he?*

Before I can even open the door, I heard something crashing inside and my soul went out from my body thinking that something had happened to Samantha unnie.

I quickly grabbed the door handle and once the door opened, I was surprised to see a weird scene in front of me.

Haiden was on top on Jake, the two entangled in a string filled with, from what I can see, are paper cranes. Yohan was on the floor while Josh was looking like a mess beside them.

"Yah, give me a second, don't move," Haiden asked while Jake continued on wiggling.

"Hyung, you're hitting my balls, fuck." Jake screamed while he squirms under his hyung.

"Shut up, you two, Jessie is almost here!" Josh hissed as he tries to help untangle the two.

*What the hell was happening?*

Apparently, nobody had noticed that I was already here.

"Fuck you, Haiden, I told you to be careful with the paper cranes, I'm going to kick your ass, the both of you!" Yohan screeched and I had to stop myself from laughing when I saw his hair, a paper was sticking on top and he looked so cute as he sits on the ground pulling something out of the two.

"Yah, Jung Haiden, stop moving!" Josh screeched and I had to resist myself from laughing out loud when I saw the sticky note on his forehead.

"Ah, guys...." Rome whispered, as his eyes landed on me. I raised my eyebrows at him.

"What, Rome? I told you to stay on the lookout!" Yohan hissed.

"About that..." his voice frail as his eyes widen at the sight of me.

"You got to be kidding me." I heard Samantha unnie and I turned to her direction as she looked at the weird people strangled on the floor.

Before I can even call them to get their attention, someone pushed open the door behind me and two individuals came rushing in, smiling like some lunatic, beautiful lunatics if I may add.

"Were you able to surprise her?"

"Did you record her reaction?"

Vash and Jason said at the same time and the rest of the boys looked at our direction, their eyes wide and mouth hanging wide open.

This scene before was so cute I had wished I had open the camera on my phone to snap a photo.

"Hmmm, hi?" I greeted them as I raise my right hand. I bite the inside of my cheek to refrain myself from laughing.

The first person to recover was Samantha unnie and she quickly run my way and pulled me out of the room.

Everyone went in panic mode and I swear I saw Yohan hitting the two guys entangled on the floor before the door finally closed leaving me and Samantha unnie outside.

I looked at her questioningly.

"What was that?"

"Huh?" she looked startled and she started biting her fingernails.

"What were you guys doing on my unit? And I thought you were sick?" I started bombarding her a lot of questions and she just looked at me deadpanned.

"I am." she said and started fake coughing.

I crossed my arm on my chest and raised my eyebrows.

"Really?"

Her eyes avoided mine and before she can even answer, we heard a loud bang inside the room and my eyes went wide.

Something weirder must have happened because when I opened the door, I saw Rome and Vash now entangled along with Haiden and Jake.

Before I knew it, I was laughing my ass off and I had to sit down because I'm already crying.

"Yahhhhh!!!!!" Yohan was going mental and Jason was deadpanned standing on the side watching the commotion in front of him.

Seeing Yohan screaming in anger, I understand why he stood frozen on the corner.

Yohan looked at him, an agonizing look written all over his face.

"This was supposed to be a romantic surprise." he said sadly.

He was seated on the floor, his shoulders down and I can make the annoyed expression on his face.

I looked around and noticed some few other strings with colorful paper cranes hanging on it.

*Did he prepare all this?*

My heart melted on the effort that he exerted.

Though things may have not gotten the way he wanted, just the thought of him going to this extent makes my heart flutter. And for me, it is more than enough.

*This is fucking amazing.*

In a sweep, my feet rushed on his direction, crouching down to his level as my hand landed on his chin while I lift his face up.

*Such a beauty*. I told to myself.

*Fuck being the girl.*

Before Yohan can even ask a question, I closed my eyes as my lips landed on his.

It was quick as it came as a surprise not just for him but for everyone on the room.

Yohan sat frozen, his eyes wide.

Silence filled the room until Josh oppa broke the silence.

"Jake, why are you peeking, you idiot."

My face flushed crimson red after I heard Josh oppa's voice.

Soon enough, Samantha's squealing can be heard on the room while the rest of the boys still try to get off from the strings of paper cranes.

And here I am, seating in front of Yohan who's mouth is still hanging wide open.

Soft chuckles escaped my lips.

"Min Yohan has lost his cool, does he? So much for the swag master." I teased him before I gave him another peck on the lips and ran for my life while laughing.

This time, I'm letting myself go with the flow.

*Jessie, you're no longer alone*. I told myself and a smile shown across my face.

*Coz now, I have them. I have him.*

---

# Chapter 29

**Jessie's POV**

"Yah, I said it's okay." I chuckled as I stare at Yohan's sad expression.

*He's so adorable.*

"I can't believe you guys. The paper cranes that we've been folding since last night were all broken." Samantha unnie pouted and though they were all looking sad, I feel ecstatic deep inside.

The amount of happiness that I'm feeling is indescribable. Just knowing the fact that he made an extreme effort like this makes my heart skip a lot.

He's making me feel so damn special that I'm barely keeping my sanity.

My eyes landed on his exhausted state.

*Did he really stayed up all night to prepare this for me?*

I mean, he had cooked me breakfast and even sent me a flower to the office.

I can't help but think if I really deserve all this.

"What are you thinking?" I was taken off from my trance when I heard him speak, his eye bore into my soul.

I can't help but get a bit nervous.

"If you are thinking what I'm thinking, stop it. You deserve every good thing that comes to your way."

My brows furrowed.

*How did he think about that?*

"Are you some kind of a psychic?" I can't help but ask but a worried look just spread all over his face.

"I'm not but I've come to know how little you always thought of yourself." he stated.

He's right and before I knew it, everyone's attention is now with me.

"Yah, Jessie, you are so amazing so stop thinking so little about yourself." Josh oppa stated while he hugs Samantha unnie who's smiling at me.

"You know; not even half of the people here can do the things that you are able to. You're almost a genius." Rome added.

"He's right. By the way..." my eyes went wide when I felt Vash's hands wrapped around my arms, his boxy smile showing.

"Yah, Jessie, can you teach me how to produce music?" he cooed I almost choke on my own saliva. "Rome and Yohan hyung doesn't teach me!!!" he whined.

"Kim Vash, let go of the filthy hands before I smack the sense out of you. " I heard Yohan and Vash immediately let go, his arms scratching the back of his head.

"Yohan hyung is so possessive. Tsk." I looked around at what Haiden stated.

"Huh?"

"Don't mind him." And then I felt his hand wrapped around mine as he pulled me gently.

"Hey, where are we going?" I muttered as he slowly drags me away from the group.

I looked around and so Samantha unnie smiling at me.

"Yeah, go get some Yohan hyung!"

"Awwww." I chuckled after I saw Josh oppa smacking Jason at the back of his head after what he said.

"Hyung, try the apple flavor!" This time, Samantha unnie smacked Rome's head.

Before we are able to go out the room, I heard Jake asking Haiden oppa.

"Hyung, what's the apple flavor, is it delicious?"

*Oh god.*

Before I knew it, we are standing at the lobby and noticed a lot of people staring at us.

Why not? Yohan is not wearing any mask.

I had to release his hands on mine as I try to fumble from my pockets looking for my mask but then a hand stopped me.

I looked up and saw Yohan staring at me intently.

"What are you doing?" I asked him worriedly, still fully aware of the stares that we're getting.

"You don't have to hide yourself to the world." he looked at me gently as he cupped my face with his hands.

"Yohan..." I muttered, my eyes getting teary.

I can feel my heart beating rapidly. My body started shaking a little as fear started to eat my system.

"I'm scared. " I told him as a tear fell down my cheeks.

He started wiping my tears.

"Don't be scared, Jessie. The world is a wonderful place."

"No." I whispered. "The world has never been good to me." I told him as I remember all those times that I had been crying.

"The world is a scary place. People will hurt you regardless if you're not doing anything wrong to them." I stared back at his wonderful eyes. "They will hurt me again."

My eyes automatically closed as I felt his lips touches my forehead.

Somehow, this made my nerves calm down. The rapid beating of my heart no longer happen because of being scared but because of the emotions that his presence is giving me.

*Yohan... You've been someone who had given me the most painful feeling but you, yourself is like a medicine to my existence.*

"I'm here for you. We'll see the world together." he smiled. "Trust me."

With my eyes teary, I grabbed his hands which are cupped around my face and faced him.

"Promise me that you won't let go of my hand when we see the world." I whispered.

He then looked at me straight in the eye, sincerity evident on his gaze.

"I won't, I promise. I will stay with you whatever happens. I will run with you while you explore the beauty outside. And I will hug you in case you find anything ugly in front of you. I will be here Jessie. I will stay until the end."

My heart fluttered at his words.

*Why is he like this?*

These emotions, this happiness, I'm afraid he's wasting his time giving all of his attention to me.

He is a world kpop star. Doesn't he deserve better?

"Yohan, I'm not perfect. I don't deserve this. I don't deserve you." I gazed at him worriedly.

He chuckled at my world.

"For what it's worth, I will stay with you. And to be honest, I'm confident enough to say that you deserve the best. The truth is, it's not you who doesn't deserve me. It's actually me who doesn't deserve you. Because you're a wonderful human being. You're pure and true to yourself. You may think lowly of yourself but then you prove everyone wrong about how people judge you unfairly."

Again, I started crying at his words.

*Should I really trust his words?*

"Let's go?"

He then grabbed my hands and I felt a warm sensation yravel through my veins.

*I will trust you Yohan.*

I turned my head towards his direction and nodded, his gummy smile immediately greeted me.

*Why are you so perfect?*

And then, we both started walking outside, both him and me not wearing any mask. We're going to see the world together, bare from any facade.

*Because I trust him....*

---

# Chapter 30

**Jessie's POV**

I sigh as I notice a few people staring at my direction even if I'm still wearing my face mask.

I was walking on the lobby.

This has been going on for a few weeks now after a picture of me and Yohan came out.

Their fans don't really know who I was but people at the office kept on looking at me strangely inside the office.

I pulled my mask to cover my face more as I continually walk towards the elevator but before I even reach it, my body stiffen when I felt someone hugging me from behind.

"Good morning, My Jessie!"

My heart started hammering inside my chest as I smell vanilla scent coming from behind.

*That voice, of course I would remember.*

*Min Yohan*, the person who's making me sleep less at night.

I can't stop thinking about him and him sending me messages a lot is making it harder.

He spun me around and gave me a peck on my forehead.

*Oh my God.*

I thought Yohan was the least showy among them but ever since we got together, he started showing otherwise.

"Yah, Yohan!" Josh oppa called and I was never happy that someone interrupted us because I swear I might faint any minute if Yohan continued being like this.

Someone pulled me from his hug and the next thing I was I was being sandwiched between Vash and Jason.

"Hyung! You're going to kill Jessie at this rate." Haiden exclaimed and I nodded unconsciously.

The boys laughed at my reaction.

"Shut up Haiden. I am still not forgiving you and Jake for ruining my surprise." he muttered as he pulled me back away from the younger ones.

"Don't touch my girlfriend you idiots." he said as his arms wrapped around my shoulders.

I felt my knees weaken.

Once the elevator opens, we all entered as we are going on the same floor anyways.

Yohan pulled me closer as more people enter inside the elevator.

*What is this? Some kdrama?* I told myself.

I looked up when I felt someone looking at me but I hope I didn't because Yohan was staring at me.

"What?" I whisper-shouted.

"Nothing. I just miss you." he muttered and my cheeks turned red while I heard the boys grunt.

"Yah, hyung!!!" Rome protested.

Soon enough, we exited the elevator but my eyes are still in the ground due to embarrassment.

I can't believe Yohan spoke out loud earlier.

"Really Yohan, I think you need to tone down a little." Josh oppa said while laughing.

We all entered the room where the meeting will be happening. Actually, I will actually be listening if there is something that they want to change on the final output for their title song.

This will actually be the first time that I will be here because when they don't know yet who I was, they just give me the outputs on the meeting.

The boys were seated together while I decided to sit at the far corner. There are already some people inside as well.

Once my father came, they started the meeting. After they listened to the song, my father started asking questions.

"So, what do you think?"

I tapped my thigh in anticipation.

"Oh, ah..." Haiden oppa looked at my direction.

"It's fine!" Jason added and I looked at them confused.

Are they scared to tell their opinion on the song because of me?

A sigh escaped my lips as I remove my mask.

"Tell your thoughts about it. I don't care if you think it's not good enough."

Josh oppa looked alarmed. "No! It's really good."

"Tskk, I don't believe it. The last time I received your outputs about the final song, I had like two pages of violent reactions on it."

I heard Jake laughing.

"Actually, that's because they hated you that time so they point out even those unnecessary things just to piss you off." he muttered and the boys glared at him.

"Is that right? Then who hated me the most." I asked and I laughed when all of them even the staffs pointed at Yohan.

He grunted in response.

"Busted." Vash said while laughing.

The meeting resumed and when everything has been finalized, we were told that we can rest for the day.

Yohan immediately pulled me away from them and lead me out of the building. Of course, a lot of people are still looking at us.

"Hey, where are we going?" I asked but he just gave me his gummy smile in return.

*Okay. I'm dead.*

While we wait for a taxi, he looked at my direction and fixed the mask that I was wearing.

*Is he for real? Why is he so sweet?*

I heard a few fans squealed not too far from us.

After the articles came out of me dating Yohan, I saw a lot of people trying to get my photos so I ended up covering my face more.

Well, not that I'm afraid to get associated with Yohan but he said that I should cover my face so I won't feel bothered about it.

I was aware with the hate comments that were spreading but too bad, I don't do social media.

Also, after meeting the boys, I've learned to love myself more.

I am no longer that person who would hide and just cry on the corner.

"Let's go." he gently pulled my hand as we ride a taxi.

After at least twenty minutes, we entered a columbarium.

*Wait, who are we going to visit here?*

After a while, we stopped on the farthest corner of the room.

He looked at me and smiled.

"Remember when we first met?" he asked.

I nodded. That was when I played a piano and sang. I didn't know he was in the living room sleeping and he got mad at me.

"And then I got mad because you played the song on the music sheet?"

Again, I nodded.

He sighed and held both of my hands.

"Whatever I tell you, please make sure to listen to me untik the end, araso?"

I got nervous all of a sudden.

He then turned towards the urn in front.

"Jenna-ah..." he started and I turned un front as well.

"I once promised you something... That once I found the girl that I love, I'll let you meet her."

*Who was Jenna?*

"Well here she is. Too bad, you can't meet her in person."

He then looked at me and pulled me to his side.

"Jessie, I want you to meet my best friend, Kim Jenna."

I bowed on her urn after what Yohan said.

"Hm, so the song was for your best friend?" I asked him and he nodded.

"She wrote it but I can't seem to finish the song."

He hugged me from the side.

"Would it be weird if I tell you that you actually resemble her a little?" he said and he look a little tense.

"I guess a little." I muttered and then something clicked.

Was he nervous because I might think differently?

"Yah, I did not like you because you look like her okay? I don't like her that way and we're just best friends. Plus, you two are not alike, so---yah!!! Why are you laughing? " he started rambling and I can't help but chuckle at how cute he looks.

"Sorry, " I said as I still continue to laugh and he just pouted.

He cupped my face and gave me a peck on the lips.

"I'm glad you're not taking this on a different light." he whispered.

"I could have, but since you told me yourself, I won't because I trust you." I smiled at him and that put him at ease.

"Ahhh, you adorable little pumpkin." and he just pinch my cheeks.

"Yohan?" we both turn around when we heard someone spoke.

Yohan immediately bowed when he saw the woman. My face immediately bowed, facing the ground.

"Oh, it's really you. And who's this?" she asked and I looked uo to greet the woman.

"Hello. My name is Choi Jessie." I greeted and I was shocked to see her started crying.

"Oh my God.." I said as I move forward her.

Her hands immediately landed on my face as she continues to cry.

"Auntie, are you okay?" Yohan asked as he also moved forward to support the woman.

"I'm sorry, but did you say, your name is Jessie?"

"Yes Auntie." I answered and I was startled when she hugged me so tight.

"Ahhh, are you okay?" I asked as I look at Yohan who was staring at me with the same confused look as mine.

Before I knew it, the lady passed out while hugging me and Yohan and I screamed in panic.

*Jesus.*

---

# Chapter 31

**Jessie's POV**

"Where is that sweet cheeky guy?" I talked to myself as I stare at the horizon in front, unable to hide the smile on my face as I see the beautiful sun about to set in front of me.

I am currently in the rooftop of the building, a place I used to stay with whenever I cry and hide from people. Now, it seems like a haven for me.

The whole afternoon has passed but I did not see even a shadow of Min Yohan. But I don't feel any fear in my heart.

These past few weeks had been the best and I never once doubt the love of Min Yohan.

He will surely contact me once he had the chance. Plus, the rest of the boys isn't in the office as well.

*I wonder what they are doing.*

A smile crept at the corner of my lips when I remember the words that came out of his lips last time.

"Remember when I told you to fix me? Well, you did. Unconsciously, I started seeing the best of me so I can be a better person for you.

Do you remember your exact words? That I am as broken as you are. But I don't think that's the case."

He told me those words while his hands cupped around my face. He stared at me like I am the most beautiful person that ever existed and it feels so damn amazing.

"I think that you're really a strong woman. You've been through a lot. You were hurt a lot of times both physically and emotionally but you're still here. I think you may just have underestimated yourself. think you're the strongest person I know and I am so lucky to be able to have you."

The words he spoke to me brought warmth within me and for once, I appreciated the fact that I did not end my life during those times that I thought I am always alone and that the world had gone against me.

It makes me appreciate the things around me.

*My father who's always there behind me silently looking over me...*

*The job that I came to love because making music brings me happiness...*

*The people around me who never failed to understand me even after all my shortcomings...*

*The people who hurt me and now made me an even stronger person...*

*I guess I really had to overcome those hardships to be where I am today...*

I looked above and started humming a tune that's been going on my mind lately.

And then suddenly, I felt a pair of hands covering my eyes.

I chuckled.

"Yohan, you can't fool me. I can smell your perfume." I told him and I felt his hand loosen.

"Damn it." He grunted as he sits beside me, his hand landing on mine.

He intertwined our fingers and brought it close to his lips.

I bet a lot of his fans are so jealous.

Our relationship had been official and a lot of fans are okay with it. It's fine because I don't get affected by rude comments since I hate checking the social media.

Plus, I have Yohan with me. What more can I ask for?

"Where were you?" I asked him.

"Why, did you miss me?" he raised his eyebrows.

I pouted.

"No."

He pulled me closer as he encloses me in a hug.

I knew it. He can't resist my charms. I told to myself.

"I fetch someone," he muttered.

"Who?" I asked confused as we slowly move away from each other.

I stared at him for a moment.

He flashed his gummy smile on me and I swear my heart did a double flip.

"That's a secret."

He once again pulled me closer and hugged me, this time, tighter.

"Hey, you're scaring me." I told him.

He is being so extra. Though he is normally sweet towards me even in front of the boys, I feel like there is something going on.

Before he can even answer, I heard my phone ring.

I checked my phone and realized that my father was calling.

"Hello, Dad?" I asked.

"Come here at my office, If Yohan is with you, go with him." my father said and before I can even respond, the call ended.

I look at Yohan confused and he avoided my gaze.

"Hey, you definitely knew something." I accused him but he just shrugged his shoulders.

We both stood up from our seat and I hug myself with my arms when I felt the cold wind flew by.

I automatically turned to him when I heard him snicker.

"Stop wearing revealing clothes okay?" he removed his black jacket and covered me.

I was wearing a black crop top with a long black fitted skirt that goes down until under my knees. It has a slit until just above my knees so I don't think it was revealing.

"This isn't revealing," I told him.

"Can't you get back to just wearing black pants and a hooded jacket?" he pouted.

We walk towards the exit.

Ever since we got together, I learned to fix myself. And I'm starting to enjoy shopping as well, something I never really liked before.

"Nope. I love my clothes."

"More than me?" he asked and I decided to be playful by not answering him.

"Wow." He uttered, shock evident on the tone of his voice.

"I'll make sure to rip those clothes every time then." he playfully added and my cheeks blushed as dirty images began flashing before me.

I smack his shoulder as I saw him laughing at my expression.

Not long before, we're now standing in front of my father's office.

I wonder why he called me.

We knocked a few times before I finally opened the doorknob.

A smile crept at the corner of my lips once I saw the face of my father.

Before I can even go and hug him, I notice another person seating on the couch.

"Oh, hello." I greeted the lady.

I looked at Yohan and he smiled at me.

"What are you doing here, auntie?" I asked.

She was that lady we met in the Columbarium, the mom of Yohan's best friend.

Once she saw me, she stood up from her seat and rush towards me, engulfing me in a hug.

My eyes widen in shock but I wrapped my arms around her as well. The lady started to weep and I can't help but get teary-eyed as well.

I don't even know but I seem to like her the first time I saw her.

My eyes landed on my father's direction as he smiles at me.

"Jessie, she's your mom. Your real mom." he said and I felt my heartbeat quicken and my body froze.

*Mom?*

A word that I never knew existed.

Ever since, I never knew who my mom was or I can't remember.

I can barely remember my childhood and all that is left with me ae the moments when I stayed in the orphanage so having someone telling me that she's my mom is strange to me.

"Mom?" I whispered and she moved away a little to look at me.

She tucked a few strands of my hair to my ears as she stared at me lovingly.

"Ne, Jessie. I'm your mom and you're my daughter. Jessie, Kim Jessie" she stated and I don't even know what to feel.

*Is this for real?*

---

# Chapter 32

**Jessie's POV**

"Wow," I muttered in amazement as I watch the boys perform live for their concert.

To be honest, this is the first time that I am watching them perform and I'm so glad I agreed when Yohan asked me too.

Two weeks ago, I found out my family. More like, my family found me, all because of Yohan.

It turns out, my Mom lost me when I was a kid. They tried to find me for years until my older sister got sick. Unfortunately, she died.

Yohan and my sister became friends until unnie Jenna died.

I cried a lot after I realized that I wasn't even able to see my sister before she died. But Yohan assured me that she lived a happy life. Though it shattered my heart for a million pieces when he said that my unnie always bought everything by twos in case they find me

If Yohan did not bring me to the Columbarium that day, I might not have found my family.

A smile escaped my lips after remembering how Yohan accompanied my father after my Mom desperately asked Yohan about me. That's when they realized that I am the same little kid that was lost when I was little.

All my life, I thought nobody loves me, that I was all alone.

I allowed myself to think that nobody wanted me, until Yohan came into my life.

Every day, all he did was to show and made me feel how special I am and how much he loves me.

He'd cook me food and sing me songs to the point that the rest of the boys were already whining.

I was seated on a perfect spot near the stage, where I can see their every move.

*So this is how it feels to see them perform live and up close, huh.*

Before, after they finish their recording, that means my job is also finished. Except when we had to record for other versions for concerts and live shows. But everything ends there.

I covered my ears when both girls beside me screamed at the top of their lungs after Yohan's eyes landed on my direction.

"Did you see that? Yohan oppa looked at me" the girl beside me shake her friend really hard.

"Stupid, he isn't looking at you. I think he was looking at her." she said pointing at my direction.

I pretended not to hear their conversation and adjusted the mask that I was wearing.

I am really never comfortable with people.

**"Jason oppa!!!! I love you!"**

**"Jake, marry me!!!!"**

**"Oh my God, just look at Vash. My Vash, I love you!!!"**

I chuckled after I heard a male fan shouting over Josh oppa's name.

**"Jung Haiden! You can dance me to bed!"** I cringed at what the other girl had said.

**"Kim Rome, you're so sexy!"**

I shook my head in amazement. I never knew concerts can get this crazy.

After their song, Dope, the members gathered in the middle, just around in front of me and my cheeks blushed after I realized that Yohan kept on glancing to my direction. Good thing, it was dark and I am still wearing my mask.

"Unnie, I swear Yohan oppa is keeps on looking at you." the girl beside me muttered and I just shrugged my shoulder, not letting her notice how nervous I am becoming.

"Wait, aren't you that girl with Yohan oppa?" she said and I pulled my mask higher as a few more girls started to look at my direction.

"Oh my God, that's her. Unnie, thanks for making our Yohan oppa smile a lot!"

I was taken aback when one girl grabbed both of my hands and happily jumped up and down in front of me.

"Is that really her?"

"Oh, I wish we can see her face."

"I bet she's not that beautiful that's why she's covering her face."

"But I like her. She doesn't seem like a fake ass bitch."

I bit my lower lip after I realize a few people murmuring around me.

My heart quickens it's beating.

*No. I can't have my panic attack in here.*

My eyes started to get teary and the girl in front of me must have noticed as she stopped jumping around.

"Unnie, are you okay?" she said as my hands landed on my chest and I look on the ground afraid to see the eyes of all the people.

I can feel the beads of sweat forming on my forehead. I was starting to breathe heavily.

The next thing I knew, the place got silent and I was hearing someone calling my name.

"Jessie!"

*The voice sounds familiar.*

"Jessie, look at me, please"

The girl tapped me by the shoulder and pointed in front of the stage and Yohan was crouching down, looking at me worriedly.

"Are you okay?" he asked worriedly and I realized, a few men already went near my direction.

"Do you want to go back stage?" he asked I shake my head.

*No.*

I am enjoying seeing him smile while performing.

He seemed to be the happiest when he is in front of his fans, singing and rapping.

"Unnie, it's okay. I think you need to go. A few fans were glaring at your direction. You might get hurt in here." she said and I smiled at her.

She'd been nothing but a dear.

The girl behind her nodded as well.

"These are fans but some gets too possessive and jealous sometimes. You can't control everybody." the other girl chimed in.

"Thanks, what are your names?" I asked.

"I'm Ji Hee and she's Eun Ji." the other girls said.

"Thanks a lot. I'll make sure to tell the boys about you." I told them and then squealed.

I looked in front and nodded at Yohan who returned with the boys and I move with the two men who accompanied me back stage.

"Jessie, are okay?" one of their stylist asked worriedly.

"I'm okay." I said as I remove my mask. There are few people here anyways and most of them works for our company.

My brows furrowed as I saw the stage director and music director talking at the side.

"We can't just use a recording when the boys always rehearse with a band!"

"Excuse me?" I butt in. "Is there anything wrong?"

I knew both directors as sometimes, they ask my opinion for ensembles and pieces to be used for concerts.

"The drummer hurt his wrist and his arm is totally swollen so he had to head back stage as the boys were talking with their fans." the music director said, panic obvious on his face.

"Isn't this almost the end of the concert? Don't you have other back up musicians to play?" I asked, raising my eyebrows.

"Unfortunately, none as of the moment. We don't really know what to do." he messed up his hair and I bit my lip.

"I can play the drums. I mean, I watched their rehearsals earlier." I added.

It's true though, I watched the while rehearsal and since I basically arranged most of the pieces, I can basically act as the music director if I want.

And of course, I can play any instrument. I use raw pieces when creating music.

"Are you sure?" the music director sounded hopeful and I just can't say no.

Plus, I don't want their performance to get messed up.

"I am so glad you're here Jessie. Come here, you can talk with the band first and I'll ask Rome to make their segment a little longer so you can prepare."

I headed towards the band's direction and they bowed at me.

Once we did a run down on what to do, I sat on the drums and adjusted the pieces for my comfort.

Good thing that I am not too exposed to people and the boys didn't notice me as well.

Soon enough, Kim Vash headed in front to start the song.

They're going to do the intro for their second single.

I watch in awe while I play as the boys continuously sings with passion, regardless of how tired they may seem. The smile on their faces are inevitable.

*They really love what they're doing.*

I don't even know what happened but soon enough, I found myself enjoying and didn't realized that my mask had fell off my face and once the song ended, Yohan was grinning at me.

*That face, I am so glad I can call that person mine.*

*I love you, Min Yohan.*

---

# Chapter 33

**Jessie's POV**

"Yes, Dad. Don't worry, I will be back before dinner." A smile crept on the corner of my lips as I bid goodbye to my father.

I'm staying alternately with both my adoptive and real family.

Ever since I found my family and I've been together with Yohan, I have always been feeling rainbows and butterflies. When we're together, it feels like nothing matters, just him and me. And I am so liking it.

When I watched their concert, I've finally realized how music makes his life complete.

How his gummy smile appearing automatically just by seeing the faces of the people supporting them? It felt surreal. And somehow, I start to question my own love for music.

Before, music has always been my resort which I turn to whenever I feel alone.

For me, it is the only thing that wouldn't leave me, especially when I thought that the whole world was against me.

After I played the drums for them with the music that I help them create, I felt contentment and happiness.

And I realized that I am no longer depending on music for myself but I guess, I've come to love it in general.

I am always happy that sometimes, I'm scared that one day, this will all end.

I hide my phone on my jean's pocket as I wait for the elevator to open. I am currently at the office while VOELEVARD is on tour.

It has been three days and I was sure they'll be back today.

*They were probably already at the airport.*

Just the thought of seeing Yohan again makes my heart flutter.

He had always been a sweetheart and regardless of how many times I told him not to call me and take a rest instead, he still does.

*Sometimes I wonder, do I really deserve his love?*

He is perfect and every girl would die to take my place. And I feel like I don't have much to offer.

Yeah, still self-loathing, but I just can't help it.

Again, my phone suddenly rings and I pulled it out of my pocket. After seeing the name registered on the screen, my smile automatically widens.

"You just called, like three hours ago," I answered and I heard him chuckle on the other line.

"That's because I love hearing your voice." his sexy tone seeping through my sanity.

*Why does he have to sound sexy even on the phone?*

"Silly, where are you?" I asked as I bit my lower lip.

My heart hammering in my chest.

I will never get used to Yohan being like this.

My body automatically turned pivot as the people from the elevator went out. I decided to stay on the corner and catch the next ride instead.

"I'm almost there. Why? miss me?" he teased and even though I can't see him, I am sure he was grinning on the other line.

"Is that Jessie?" I heard Josh oppa from the background.

Muffled sounds were soon heard and I was only able to catch a few words, one including Samantha unnie's.

"Wait, babe, I have to go. See you later. I love you, okay."

My knees almost weaken.

*Min Yohan, what are you doing to me?*

"I love you too," I whispered. Soon enough, the sound of the dial tone greeted my ears.

*What a lovely way to start my morning.*

The sound of the elevator opening pulled me back from my train of thoughts, I did not even notice two girls riding with me.

I was checking on the time on my wrist when I notice the girl hitting all of the numbers for each floor.

I looked at them confused.

Before I can even speak, terror had filled my eyes as I finally see the two.

They were full of make-up and somehow, it bothers me how they keep glaring in my direction.

My stomach churned upon realizing how scary the two looked.

"What are you doing?" my voice shake as I felt the other girl pinning me on the corner, her eyes glaring dangerously at me like I am some kind of a criminal.

"Stay away from our boys," she stated as she gritted her teeth.

My stomach churned as fear flashes across my eyes.

"Moreover, stay away from Yohan oppa!" the other girl exclaimed.

My eyes automatically closed as I felt her nails digging into my skin.

I groan in pain as the two laughed at my state.

My eyes started to get teary and my breathing started to get irregular.

*Nothing's change Jessie. You're still the same loser that everybody knew.*

"You're not even beautiful." I flinched as the other girl removed the mask from my face.

"You look so ugly! What did Yohan oppa even see in you?" she flicked my forehead and I bit my eyes in pain.

*Why is this happening again?*

"No, please...." I pleaded, tears now streaming down my eyes.

"Awww, look at her pleading!" the girl in front of me laughed maniacally.

"I heard you're a loser in your school? Does Yohan oppa knows that you try to kill yourself?" she stated, her grin was scary and the girl behind her was eyeing me badly.

My eyes widen at what she said.

Suddenly, images of how I was bullied in school flashes before my eyes.

*How people hurt me...*

*How they make my life miserable...*

*How I almost died...*

The girl holding me laughed out loud.

"You look pathetic!

*No.*

Images of Yohan smiling at me flashes through my eyes.

*I'm not pathetic.*

"**You are worth it**." Yohan's voice rang through my eyes.

**"I love you..."**

My eyes snapped back open as if I suddenly woke up from my slumber. I tried to check the elevator but since it's still early, not a lot of people are in the office yet.

*No one's going to save me this time.*

Tears started streaming

"Hit her!" she screamed and I closed my eyes as I felt her hands landing on my cheeks. It was so strong; my cheeks went numb for a moment.

My mouth tasted the blood inside as my teeth accidentally bit my lower lip.

"No, please!!!" I tried to lift my hand to caress my stinging skin but her gripped tightened. My skin was probably already bruised due to the strong force that's using.

*Why did I have to wear a crop top today?*

It stings so bad but all I can do was cry.

"Stop it," I whispered but even I can barely hear myself.

How were they even able to get inside the building?

"Stop it," I repeated, this time, I tried to louden my voice.

"It's you who should stop!" she started screaming. The other girl pulled my hair. They were getting too violent, I groaned in pain as my head hit the surface.

Just then, the elevator opened.

"Don't touch me!!!!"

"I will sue you!!!"

The two girls were pulled out by the security.

I heard screaming and a commotion was definitely happening but I can't do anything.

I couldn't move.

I can barely even breathe.

I'm no longer aware of what's happening but I felt a hand wrapped around my body as I slowly drift away from consciousness.

"Yohan..." I whispered.

---

# Chapter 34

**Jessie's POV**

As soon as my eyes opened, my eyes immediately scanned the room that I'm currently in.

A relieved sigh escaped my lips as I saw the sleeping figure of Yohan on the couch.

Images of what happened on the elevator flashes before me, how those stupid girls tried to beat me up.

I remember hearing Yohan's voice before I passed out. *Did he actually come to save me?*

I bite my lower lip as I try to sit down on the bed.

The room looks familiar but I'm definitely sure this isn't my unit, my room nor my stepdad or real mom's house. We're now back in the boys' unit, and judging from the interior, I am currently in Yohan's room.

Once I saw his face, guilt started to eat through me as I realize how I was occupying his bed when he just came from a long journey and series of concerts.

I removed the blanket that was covered in my body before moving towards him and placing it in his peaceful state.

I grunt as I notice the bruises on my arms and probably, I also have a few on my face.

The fact that he had seen me like this makes me feel like I've disappointed him. Ever since, he had never failed to make me feel love. And since then, I know he was trying so hard to help me get over my fears and aloofness to people.

He always makes sure to remind me that I am not alone, that everybody cares for me as much as I care for them.

*And I'm failing to remember that every time.*

He had always been considerate and somehow, I feel like he deserves so much more.

God knows that I was trying but doing that for almost twenty years makes it harder for me to change.

*Why can't I just be me?*

But then, I also think that maybe, I wasn't really that person but the person that was made because I didn't stand up for myself.

I crouch down a few spaces before him so I can study his face.

*Did he cry?*

My hand brushes the locks of his hair as I stare at his beauty.

Sometimes I envy how crystal clear his skin looks. He may be pale for some but I love every bit of him, even the way his words slurs when he is talking.

*You are so lucky Kim Jessie for having a Min Yohan.*

A smile crept at the corner of my lips.

I felt my throat getting dry so I decided to go out of the room.

Once outside, I was greeted by the boys going wild in the living room.

Vash and Jake were dancing like crazy while Haiden was singing on a mic.

Rome was rolling on the floor while Josh in flying multiple kisses on everyone.

*Are they on V-live or they're just being their usual selves?*

By the time I've spent with them, I've come to realize that they were really consisted of some weird bunch of people.

I can still remember the first day I met them. They were all piled up like a pancake on the floor except for Yohan.

I shake my head in laughter. But then I realized that there are only five of them while Yohan is in his room.

The pink-haired guy was missing.

Jason was nowhere to be found, probably in the restroom or something.

*How can these boys have so much energy when they just had a hectic schedule?*

I really admire their passion on what they are doing. It goes to show that the things that they are doing right now is what really makes them happy.

Ever since I attended their concert and played with them on stage, I felt a sudden outburst of inspiration.

I want to make people happy. If the music that I am making with the boys makes people feel happy and all kinds of emotions, I feel like everything is worth it and my life had been more meaningful.

Before I can even move, Haiden oppa noticed my presence and he quickly moved towards my direction with a cheeky grin on his face as he gave me the mic.

"What?" I chuckled at him but he still moved the mic closer to my lips urging me to continue singing.

*This little ball of sunshine.*

Once the boys saw me, they started cheering for me. But before I can even start singing, I felt a hand on my arm and in a split second, my body turned towards the other direction and my face was greeted by the very first person I saw when I woke up.

And judging by the look on his face, he is definitely not in a good mood.

"Yohan..." I whispered.

Once the boys noticed him, the music abruptly stopped.

"Why did you guys stoppe-"

I almost choked on my saliva when my eyes landed on the newly arrived Jason, with only a towel hanging on his waist, drips of water still coming from his wet hair.

"Yah, Jason!"

"Are you crazy?"

"You're dead, hyung!"

I heard the boys saying altogether.

Once his eyes landed on me, he quickly covered his body the same time that I covered my face.

"If I ever see you roaming around this unit looking like that again Park Jason, I will cut that junior of yours." I heard Min Yohan screeched and Park Jason immediately runs back to his room.

A chuckle escaped my lips as I heard the contagious laugh of Josh oppa.

Soon enough, I felt Yohan's hands on mine as he gently pulled me back to his room.

"Use protection hyung!" I heard Rome oppa screaming and again, I had to cover my face in embarrassment. The rest of the boys laughing.

*These boys.*

"Don't mind them." Yohan screeched and soon enough, he had already closed the door.

Once the door was locked, a scream almost escapes my lips as I felt my body being lifted from the ground, my hands automatically wrapped around his neck for support as he carry me to his bed.

"Yohan..." I gulped.

*Shit. What are we going to do? I'm not ready for this.*

My cheeks blushed at the thought.

Yohan and I had already had a few make out sessions but we know when to stop.

He's not thinking of doing something right now, is he?

My hands automatically reached for his blanket as I cover myself. My cheeks getting redder and redder.

After seeing my reaction, Yohan's brows furrowed with a confused expression before it slowly turned into a grin which ended up with a full blown laughter.

I pouted.

"What are you laughing at?" I asked as I sat down on his bed, closer to where he sat.

"Yeah, what were you thinking earlier? Your face is really red," he said in between laughter.

"Thinking how ugly you are and who I will have the boys as a replacement." I scoffed, trying to hide my embarrassment from earlier.

He flicked my forehead and I grunted in pain.

"Ahhh...." I whispered. "Yahhh!" I scowled at him.

"Don't think about hitting on the boys. You're off limits and you're only mine in case that wasn't clear to you."

My jaw dropped on the floor as he I saw him grinning in front of me.

"And I'm pretty sure the boys won't hit on you anyways if they know what's good for them." he chuckles as his hands reached up to cup my face.

He stares straight through my eyes. The beating of my heart getting crazier.

*I love you, Min Yohan.*

His eyes glistened and my heart did a little somersault.

"Why?" I asked worriedly.

He shakes his head as he bites his lower lip.

Will it be so weird for me to get turn on at the sight of him even though he looked so worried?

"Jessie, promise me you won't let this thing happen to you again. Or I'd end up staying by your side or you'll going to have to marry me so I can take you wherever you go. Your choice." he muttered and I swear I almost fainted.

But then he still looked serious.

A sigh escaped my lips.

"I know and I'm sorry I've disappointed you again. But trust me, I'm trying." I told him as I lift my other hand to brush the hair covering his eyes.

"I'm getting there Yohan. Thank you for being so patient." I added. "I *promise* I will be better, for you..."

A smile flashes on his beautiful face and before I knew it, he had already pulled me closer, his lips crashing into mine.

I was caught up in surprise, my eyes widen and I felt my whole world stopped.

His soft lips continued moving and I can feel my insides burning. Before I can even respond, the door suddenly burst open.

"Hyung! Can I borro-oh shit!"

I quickly pushed Yohan away from me and covered my face in embarrassment.

"Close the fucking door Park Jason!" Yohan growled and the door slammed shot close and soon enough, Yohan's laugh echoed inside the room as he pulled me closer to his chest.

"Stop laughing." I pouted.

His hand landed on my chin, lifting it up on the process.

"But I was serious about marrying you, Jessie." and then he gave me another peck on the lips.

*Shoot. I can never get use to this. But I am not complaining either.*

---

# Chapter 35

**Yohan's POV**

"Are you ready?!!!" I screamed at the top of my lungs as I get ready for our next song.

A smile escaped my lips, adrenaline eating me alive.

This feeling whenever I stand in front of the stage, I will never get tired of it. It makes me feel alive like I am born to live for this.

I scanned the stage and flashes my gummy smile after seeing my boys playing around.

Josh hyung and Vash was walking around as Josh hyung gives thousands of kisses to our fans.

Jason was on Jake's back as they run across the stage.

Haiden was busy waving on the crowd as well as Rome.

These boys, I am just so glad I met them and they are now part of my life.

I can't imagine doing this without them.

And then my eyes landed back on the huge crowd before me.

Our Army, what will I do without their never-ending support.

To be honest, I've never thought that we will be this successful.

I can't say that we are already at the peak of our career because I know that there is still so much that we can do.

However, being able to stand in a huge crowd like this makes me want to say that, yeah, we finally made it. And we're still up for making a history.

The seven of us knows that not everyone thought that we will make it.

Not everyone was found of the music that we were creating. They said we will never make it.

Well news flash, we did. And we are not boasting. We will always be thankful for what our fans did for us. And as long as there is one, two or three people who still believes in us, we will keep on going.

I scanned the crowd before me as I try to catch a glimpse of that one other person that is very dear to me.

*Kim Jessie*

Just remembering her beautiful face is enough to make my heart flutter and it's beating gets faster.

We've been dating for more than a year and I have never been this happy before.

I knew we started on the wrong foot but I am just so glad I found her.

She brings the best out of me.

Our relationship isn't perfect. We fight like any couple and we break up sometimes but that doesn't stop us from getting back together.

Jessie may have internal conflicts mainly due to her bad experiences but that doesn't stop her from being sassy towards me and the boys.

I am just so glad Samantha is there to calm the girl.

I remember Jessie running around ready to kick Rome's ass when the other accidentally broke Jessie's piano figure. Yeah, since Rome usually just break things.

And she makes the best music.

Every time she rushes towards me with that huge smile on her face asking me to listen to that new song she had written, I can't help but get smitten by her all the more.

We share the same passion and loves it the same way.

Like what the boys always says, we are perfect for each other.

But then our moments aren't always the sweetest.

Once, we had a huge fight over her not attending her therapy session.

Jessie had a difficult past and she's struggling because of it.

Every time I see her shaking in fear and panic, my heart aches and I am getting hurt for her. That's the reason why me and the boys wants her to get better.

But this little lady is really hard headed. She normally skips her therapy sessions and reasons out that she has a deadline to finish.

The hell with our songs! We don't need to rush in creating songs if that means she will not get better.

Until now, Jessie still wears mask whenever we go out. She stares at the ground when other people talks to her.

And it hurts to know that she's having a hard time and I can't do anything about it.

I know it's not that easy. I've battled depression before and I am still from time to time. But I want her to enjoy life the same way other people enjoys them.

But I know I shouldn't be rushing her.

My heart started beating like crazy when I realized that she isn't on the same place where she was earlier.

Did something happen to her?

*Shit.*

She has a huge phobia with being in a huge crowd.

*Fuck. I shouldn't have let her stay there alone.*

In panic, I reached over Rome and Josh and whispered something as I put my mic down.

"Yah, wait, let's stop first, Jessie is not there." I told them and Rome's brows furrowed.

"Relax hyung. Maybe she went to the restroom." he told me but I'm still feeling scared.

*What if Jessie is having a panic attack?*

"Breathe Yohan, the staff won't let anything bad happen to her." Josh hyung muttered but the feeling of uneasiness still lingered on me.

I can still remember how Jessie started shaking so badly when she last watched our concert from the crowd.

And then the lights suddenly dim.

"What's happening?" I whispered. This isn't part of the concert. We never had this during the rehearsal.

The crowd was silent and so is the boys.

I was too pre-occupied with Jessie earlier that I didn't even noticed that only Rome and Josh hyung was left with me on the stage.

And then the screen behind us turned on Jake and Jason's face appeared.

"Hello!" the two happily chirped and the crowd went wild.

They are still wearing the same clothes that we have on stage.

*Are they doing this live? How come I didn't know about this?*

I turned my head towards the two beside me and the just shrugged their shoulders.

"Everyone, we know you might be thinking what's happening. However, you should know that it's Yohan hyung's birthday so we decided to make this day special for him." Jason stated and I laughed a little.

The crowd was screaming.

*Oh right, it is my birthday.*

"Maybe you are all wondering what we are doing back stage." Jake stated as he shows his bunny teeth.

"Well, there are a few people who wants to greet him." Jason added.

I felt Josh hyung hugging me.

"Yah, what is this?" I chuckled and Rome just wiggled his eyebrows.

"Just wait for it. We worked hard for this Yohan so just enjoy please." Josh hyung stated and I just shake my head.

I am never fond of surprises especially if it is directed to me.

As long as everyone is happy, I am good with that.

And the image of my brother appeared on the screen and I laughed so loud.

My brother looks so awkward on camera but I still love him the same.

Next to appear on the screen was my parents.

I started tearing up as they tell me how proud they are to what I have become.

I can still remember how they initially opposed to me on pursuing my dreams bu now, they are so supportive.

"I love you!" I shouted on the scream as if my parents will hear me.

Then a few more people flash on the screen including Choi PD. At this point, I am already crying a river.

*These boys. How can they do this to me?*

And then Vash and Haiden's face appeared on the screen.

"Hyung, did you think this is all?" Vash teased and the crowd went wild.

"Hyung, there is this one little bird who kept on pestering us this past few days." Haiden added and my brows furrowed. He was about to speak again when the feed got cut off and the screen turned off.

"Hey, what happened?" I said through the mic.

Just then, a light flash on the corner where the piano was situated.

But my heartbeat skipped a thousand times when I realized that someone was sitting on it.

*Jessie...*

She was facing my direction and her eyes landed on me.

"I love you" she whispered before her hands went up as she started playing some notes on the piano.

*Is she really doing this?*

I can't believe it. She's finally broken down his walls. Just the thought of her being willing to show her face to the world for me even though she's scared makes me feel special. I am so proud of her.

And then her beautiful voice boomed the crowd.

**Untrue… but I hope it's true**

**You You You**

**Don't think of anything, stop whatever it is**

**Don't say anything, just close your eyes**

**Just give me a smile**

**I still can't believe what's happening**

**All of this seems like a dream, a beautiful dream**

**Don't try to disappear**

**Is it true? Is it you?**

**You You**

**You're so beautiful, you're my all**

**Untrue… but I hope it's true**

**You You You**

**Will you stay by my side forever?**

**Will you promise me you'll never leave?**

**If I let go of your hand, you'll fly away and runaway**

**I'm scared to death, please don't run away**

**Will you stop time, stop everything?**

**If this moment passes**

**As though it hadn't happened**

**I'm scared, so please don't leave…**

Once she finished, the crowd went wild. Her voice is like an angel.

Jessie covered her face and I jogged towards her direction.

For her to do something like this makes everything even more meaningful.

As I reached her, I pulled her in a hug and I can feel hear body shaking a little.

And the screen went up again and Jessie's face showed.

"Ahhhh, I told them not to show that anymore." she whispered and I laugh as she covers her face in embarrassment.

My eyes landed on the screen as my hands still wrapped around her.

"**Yohan....**" she started, her voice so sweet, her natural cuteness showing.

"**Ah, wait a second.**" she said as she covered her face.

She looked so cute and I swear I heard the boys doubling in laughter in the background.

The crowd laughed at her cuteness.

*How come I didn't know anything about this.*

"Ahhh, they didn't edit it." she muttered as she squeezed her body tighter on mine.

"**That's okay Jessie, you can do it.**" I heard Samantha saying on the background.

"**Yah, just tell him you love him and it's over.**" I heard Josh hyung saying on the background before his cries of plea went next, Samantha probably hitting him.

The crowd laughed again.

"**Min Yohan,**" she started, her hands fiddling on the hem of her shirt.

She took the video with her natural face, no makeup and all which makes her a thousand more beautiful.

"**I know you had a hard time because of me and I'm sorry for that. You have been patient and you never gave up on us even though I am too much to handle.**" she added, her cheeks turning red.

*Ah, so cute.*

"**I know I'm not a perfect girlfriend but you are a perfect boyfriend. You're always there whenever I am having a hard time and you are always helping me to get better.**"

She suddenly looked at the camera which almost took my breath away.

"**Yesterday, I went out without a mask and I wasn't scared.**" she said, her face smiling. I can sense that she's really proud of her achievement.

**"You know how I did it? I was thinking of you."** she said a little proud. **"I thought that Min Yohan, my boyfriend will be proud once he finds out that Kim Jessie, his girlfriend had finally overcome her fears."** her hands clasped together, her face full of smile.

The crowd cooed at her cuteness. I can't blame them; she really is so adorable.

**"Yohan, I know we still have a lot to overcome but I want to thank you for giving me inspiration, for making me feel special and making me realize that the world is beautiful and I don't have to be scared of tomorrow. Thank you for bringing color to my dull world and to every other girl like me. You are selfless and kind. Please know that you deserve everything right now as well as the boys. Happy birthday and I hope you believe in yourself as well. I love you, Min Yohan."** she said before ending it with a cute heart.

"Aahhhhhhh!" Jessie wiggled beside me. "This is so embarrassing." she stated and I pulled her away from me a little so I can see her face.

Her face is a little red and she is so damn gorgeous.

My hands slowly cupped her face and the crowd went wild.

"Kim Jessie, I love you," I told her before I pulled her back, our lips touching.

I don't care about the crowd before me or the articles that will surely pop out on the internet in five minutes.

Right now, I am just happy we are together.

I have my brothers with me, my family, and Kim Jessie.

This is no longer an illusion that I was creating on my mind ten years ago when I was dreaming of my future.

*Right now, this is just us and our hearts together.*

**- the end**

---

Rock Bottom (Haiden's Story)

# Chapter 36

**Lisa's POV**

"Sam, why can't you just use Rosie's social media instead? You've been using her Skype account in video calling your boyfriend anyways," I whined to her as I give my phone to Samantha.

Her younger brother had sent her a message and the fact that he was sending it through my Instagram is starting to piss me off. A girl needs to have her phone at times, right? I mean, I'm young and there are so many things I had to do too.

Samantha is never fond of any type of social media. Tough luck for us though, she had been using either mine or Rosie's account in communicating with her boyfriend.

"I won't be staying here for so long. What's the point of making an account?" she shrugged and I kicked an invisible person in the air as my body lay on Rosie's bed. I almost grimaced at her words. I get it but then again, I still my phone.

This girl...

The three of us were in her room simply because we don't want to hang out in the living room. We miss each other easily and we rarely stay together these days. Samantha just comes here every now and then due to work.

I heard Rosie chuckle from the corner. She was lying on her bean bag.

"There you go. All done. My brother was just asking when I will be going home," she muttered and I rolled my eyes at her. Surely, I miss my friend but that doesn't mean that I'm okay with sacrificing my social media needs for her.

A huge yawn escaped my lips and after stretching a little, I stood up from Rosie's bed.

"Hey, I think I'll need to sleep. I got home last night and was barely even able to get enough sleep," I told her and she just nodded. I shake my head in amusement. Her eyes were actually just focused on her laptop, still working even though she went here for a vacation.

I mean, she doesn't really have to work so hard like that. She was allowed to rest for Pete's sake! But then again I knew for a fact that Samantha was working so hard for her brother Jake. The man was a jerk for making our friend cry but I heard they already made up and I'm glad.

As soon as my door closed, I run towards my comfy bed and plopped my body on it.

"Sleep!" I exclaimed on my own and soon enough, I felt my eyelids getting heavier by the minute and I may have already been half asleep when I remembered that I left my jacket last night at Lara's place.

With eyes almost closed, I went on my IG to send a direct message to her.

Me: *Bitch, Imma get back my thingy tomorrow. I love you! :)*

And as soon as I hit send, my eyes closed on its own until my consciousness started wandering over dreamland. At that, I wasn't able to see the response of the person I sent a message with.

Happykiddo94: *ahmm, I love you too? bitch?*

I was asleep for quite some time when I felt someone waking me up from my slumber.

"Lisa, we're going out, why the heck are you still asleep at four in the afternoon?"

My eyes squinted as I try to get use myself to the artificial blinding light that is flashing before me. My hands stretching as I try to kick the covers of my bed off from my body. Samantha was hitting my legs with one of my pillows and it took all of my patience not to kick her back. She'd probably kill me if I do. She has that, the violence tendencies when showing how much she cares.

"Sam!" I screeched, my voice a little hoarse after a long and satisfying sleep.

"Take a bath, Lisa, you smell like someone just dump some load of shit on you," Rosie chuckled and I glared at her. But then I knew I might have drooled a little when I was sleeping because I was too exhausted. Not that I care because it's only them that is seeing me right now though.

In an instant, I get off from my bed and threw my covers on it.

"Okay then bitches, get out of my room!" I screamed before pushing the two away who kept on getting chocolates on my dessert jar.

"Rosie, buy something for yourself. Don't even think I didn't know you've been sneaking into my room to get some sweets, you little shortcake," I laughed and she just smiled cheekily.

"I'm too lazy..." she whined but I still kicked the two out of my room. Once they were out, I quickly removed my top not minding that I was walking in my room in just my undies since I was actually sleeping with a loose white shirt that hangs loosely up to four inches above my knees.

Before I headed to the bathroom, I remembered how I messaged my bitch reminding her that I will be getting my stuff. The moment my hand reached for my phone, my mouth hanging wide open at the sight of her response, or should I say, the response of an entirely different person.

Happykiddo94: *ahmm, I love you too? bitch?*

I almost slipped on the floor at the sight of it.

Holy shit!

"Oh my gosh!" I whisper-shouted.

I was starting to freak out too much that I ended up doing something that might make it even worse. I accidentally sent a heart and can't fucking take it back.

In a flash, I started typing words so I can apologize.

Jesus, what would he think of me?

Wait, isn't this Sam's younger brother?

Me: *Oh gosh, I'm so sorry. I was half asleep when I accidentally typed this. This is embarrassing, oh gosh.*

I hit sent and I was startled when I saw his username underneath my message which indicates that he's actually online. My body started to sweat in nervousness and I started fanning my already blazing red face.

If his first response failed to make me slip my ass straight to the floor, the *second* one clearly did.

Happykiddo94: *That's fine. You can make me your bitch if you want to anyway *winks*

"Holy fuck," I muttered just right after my ass hit the floor, *literally*.

---

# Chapter 37

**Lisa's POV**

"You look so pale, Lisa. Are you sick?" I was startled when I heard Rosie's voice, her hands resting on my forehead checking my temperature. "You're not sick," she muttered and my cheeks blushed for a moment.

Just remembering the incident earlier makes my heart rate increase.

I mean, it's every day I end up having a conversation with a top star like that. It's totally embarrassing, I don't even know if I have the courage to share that information with my best friends especially Samantha.

Wait, that was her brother, right?

"I'm okay," I told Rosie as I try to brush off the worried look she has on her face. She had been very sensitive lately and all I know is that it's because of her and her childhood friend whom she treats as like her older brother are having a rift these days.

I'm not sure what's happened but she's not really taking it very well. I knew she was worried about the guy but I heard he professed his love to Rosie but she doesn't feel the same. Things between them aren't really good after that.

"Really? because you definitely look so pale earlier but then your eyes are started to turn red, are you on drugs or something Lisa?" she scowled at me and I laughed at her statement.

"That was good, Ro," I told her before hitting her on the shoulders which earned me a smile in return.

Just then, we heard Samantha's laughter resonating within the kitchen and both Rosie and I shake our head.

Our friend is definitely whipped on her boyfriend. But we can't blame her. Her boyfriend is a very good looking man and a famous celebrity, to begin with.

"So, I'm guessing we're not going out huh?" I chuckled and Rosie does the same. After Samantha asked us to prepare, she had been on a video call in the kitchen after I came out of my room.

"I guess? Tss," she grunted. "Seeing her being all giddy like that makes me want to go and find myself a man too," she added and I chuckled at her words.

Out of the three of us, Rosie might be the last person who would actually want to have a boyfriend just for the sake of having one. Because if she does, she would have accepted the love her childhood friend offers.

"By the way, you know Jake right?" I asked and her eyebrows raised at my question.

"That prick? What about him?" she asked and soft chuckles escaped my lips ta her annoyance. Rosie hated Jake and I understand her animosity towards the man. Both of us saw how our friend Samantha had suffered because she and her brother weren't in good terms then.

For Rosie, Jake was an inconsiderate and immature brother who didn't even bother considering his sister's feelings. She hated the man and I do too, but not as much as she does actually.

"Well, isn't he afraid of girls?" I asked and she pouted.

"That's what Samantha said. Why were you asking?" she looked at me confused and I just shrugged my shoulder.

"No reason," I answered and I watch as she stood up from her seat before throwing our friend another glance. "I'll be back in my room, call me in case our sweet little friend decided that we should leave," she stated and I nodded.

I was biting my nails, in deep thought.

Jake was afraid of girls. Surely, he wouldn't be conversing like that to me considering that I know his sister. I thought to myself.

Then who would that be?

I pulled out my phone from my pocket before opening my IG. I had been staring for a long time on the message and I was sure he knew I read it.

Just then, I was startled when I saw his avatar and a dialogue appearing a signal that he was typing a message. My heartbeat raced once again and before I can even close the app, a new message popped up and it'll be too late for me to pretend that I wasn't able to read it.

*Happykiddo94: Did I scare you? Sorry, I was being playful. I apologize if I made you uncomfortable. :(*

I immediately bolted from my seat, surprised by the content of the message. before I even knew it, I was already typing my response towards him.

*Me: No, not at all. It was my fault I called you names.*

Immediately, I saw his name flashing beneath my message indicating that he had read my response.

*Happykiddo94: Really? We're cool then, right?*

A smile came to my lips.

Why do I feel light-hearted when conversing with him?

*Me: We sure do. Btw, this is Jake, right?*

I saw him read the message but I was quite surprised when I didn't saw any indication of him responding to my message. My fingers patiently tapped on the table in front of me.

A long sigh escaped my lips when he didn't respond after five minutes.

"Well, maybe he's busy," I whispered to myself.

I had already given up when I heard another beep, indicating that I received a new message.

*Happykiddo94: Maybe I am, maybe not? Does it matter?*

A smile came to my lips.

*Me: Not at all sir.*

*Happykiddo94: Great *winks*

Well, maybe having an online friend isn't that bad.

---

# Chapter 38

**Lisa's POV**

"Awww!" I chuckled as my right foot accidentally hit the leg of my bedside table. Still giggling, I jump over my bed, stomach first not caring if I make any unnecessary noise that would probably wake up both my Mom and Dad. My parents are heavy sleepers especially Dad. Plus, my room is not that very close to where their rooms are.

"Bed..." I groaned as I reach for my pillow, hugging it very tight wishing I can crash it on my arms. If only I have that super strength, maybe it'll help me feel so much better.

My body started forming into a fetus position, cold seeping through my body proving that wearing a hanging off-shoulder and short shorts isn't a good idea. But then, I was in a club, what do you expect me to wear?

A loud grunt escaped my lips as my other hand reached for my temple.

"Fucking hurts," I groaned.

Yeah, Lisa, who told you to drink that much huh?

Turning my back a little, my eyes now focused on the ceiling. It was a little dark but the faint light coming from my open window is enough for my insides to feel heavier.

"Fucking idiot," I mumbled and before I knew it, tears started streaming down my cheeks. It was flowing like a faucet, I didn't even bother wiping the tears away.

One year, one fucking year and now it's gone.

Am I that bad of a catch for him to cheat on me like that? And to a friend?

Before I knew it, I was sobbing like crazy, all the emotion I was keeping deep down for a week already came running like a truck. It's heavy, it's painful and moreover, it's stupidly real.

Was it that hard to tell me it's over?

Was I that clingy?

Fuck, was I that unworthy?

With a heavy heart, I reached for my phone which I had thrown on my bed earlier and went straight to my contacts.

The moment I saw my ex's name, I deleted it. I did the same to my friend's name or whatever whore I should call her.

"Right, pictures," I mumbled. I went to my gallery and deleted every video and photos of us together. If I will move on, I need to do it the right way. No communication, no memories of him, no nothing.

Once I'm done, a long sigh escaped my lips.

I wish my friends were here.

A year ago, I headed back to Thailand leaving Rosie behind. Well, Samantha was back in Korea working for he brother's company and right now, I wish I am with them because if they were here, I can clearly picture how Samantha will hunt down my ex and beat him to a pulp. Rosie may also look weak but she's sassy enough to stand beside me making sure I wasn't in any way at a disadvantage.

It has been a month since I last heard from Rosie though. I know she's busy too and she probably have lots of stuff on her plate but, well, I only have a few friends to reach out with.

I reached for my phone and check on my contacts. *Should I call her?*

But she must be busy.

After wiping my tear-stained cheeks, I opened my Instagram and checked my feed.

Oh right, my apps. I still have tons of pictures of him so I deleted them too. That prick doesn't deserve to be on my feed.

I was checking on my dm's my eyes landed on a familiar username.

*Happykiddo94: Great *winks*

I almost forgot about him. That guy from that famous band, whoever he is.

That was the last time we messaged each other. It has been a year.

I wonder how he had been?

Should I send him a message instead?

I mean, he doesn't really know me. It's better to talk to him that some of my friends here. I'm not even sure who my real friends here now. Aside from Samantha and Rosie, I refuse to trust anybody at this point. But a stranger will do, right? They say that it's easier to express your emotions to someone you barely know, I can do that, right?

Before I even knew it, I was already typing.

*Me: I know it's been a year overdue but chatting with you is still one of my lucky privileges, right? *Hopeful eyes*

*A minute...*

*Two...*

*five...*

*ten...*

A long sigh escaped my lips before putting my phone down on my bed. Of course, he must be busy. Or he might not be using the account anymore. It's been a year. Who am I even kidding?

My eyes were already feeling heavy when I suddenly heard the sound of my phone beeping.

*Happykiddo94: Of course, babe. If it's you. Btw, you actually got me with the Hopeful eyes *grins*

My heart started beating like crazy, whether I was happy to be able to converse with him again or for an entirely different reason, I'm not even sure.

I started typing once again.

*Me: Should I be flattered? :)*

*Happykiddo94: Nah, I should actually. So, how are you?*

I bite my lower lip. Should I tell him? But I feel at ease whenever I converse with him, something I am confused myself since I don't even know who exactly he is. Though if I would be judging based on the situation, he's most probably Samantha's younger brother.

*Me: Heartbroken? haha*

As I read my own message, I don't know if I sound pathetic or what.

*Happykiddo94: Wait, for real? Coz missy, if you are, it's okay. Want to tell me about it?*

My heart leapt out off my chest. Seeing how concern he was makes my heart flutter and I don't know why but I feel like he was sincere it. *Should I go for it?*

*Me: I don't know. Aren't you busy on some tour or something?*

*Happykiddo94: Well no. Don't worry, I have a lot of time. Fire away :)*

After a minute of hesitating, I started typing all of my worries and every now and then I can't help but smile every time he tries to cheer me up.

*Me: Thank you so much. You don't even know how much this conversation made me a thousand times better. *grinning*

*Happykiddo94: Hey, if ever you feel like you need to talk to someone, just beep me up. If I don't reply immediately, I will as soon as I am free. Don't ever think that you're alone babe,*

His words made me feel at ease. I never knew words from a stranger can be so comforting.

*Me: I'm so glad I decided to send you a message. If you ever want someone to talk to, I can also lend an ear. I know you're famous but don't worry, I don't give a damn. What you send on my IG leaves on my IG.*

*Happykiddo94: I know and I will too. Now go to sleep. You've cried enough. And remember, tomorrow when you wake up, smile coz there are a lot more things to be happy about.*

*Me: *kisses*

With a smile on my lips, my eyes closed, my inside feeling lighter than it has ever been.

There are other things to be happy about. Right...

---

# Chapter 39

**Lisa's POV**

My hands reached for my phone on my bedside table after the sound of my alarm starting beeping like crazy. Once I was able to turn it off, my eyes squinted a little at the blinding light coming from the open window of my room.

I grunted, my other hand massaging my temple while the other started scanning through the messages on my phone.

A smile emerged on my face the moment I saw a message from him, the person I've been conversing with for the last two months.

*Happykiddo94: So how's the hangover hunn?*

Soft chuckles escaped my lips when I saw his message. Pulling my body a little, I rested my back along the headboard of my bed before I start typing for a response.

He's on a tour now and though I'm not sure he's online, there's no harm responding anyways.

*Me: Is that your new way of greeting your girl good morning? Because that's mean yakno *pouting*

I had been in constant communication with him after that night he made me feel better when I was sulking about my friend and ex. And I am so glad I messaged him because he had been nothing but a sweetheart.

He would greet me every day and ask how my life has been going, constantly reminding me that there are so many things I should be happy about.

I bite my lower lip when I saw the icon of him typing a response.

*Happykiddo94: Well hunn, this is me being concern for you, okay? How many time have you been out for a night out in a club these past two months? I wouldn't be surprised if I ever find out your belly looks bigger than mine due to all those alcohols you took. *grins*

*Me: Wow bitch. Thanks for complimenting my body. I hate you. *laughs*

*Happykiddo94: You know I still love you even with the big stomach. *winks*

My heart flutter at his words.

because we haven't each other and we basically started off with a weird conversation, it has been easy for us to talk like this. However, I always have to remind myself that this guy over here is just naturally sweet and all.

*Me: Oppa, why can't you show me your face? *Hopeful*

It has been weeks when I started pestering him about who he is. I have an idea he was Jake because as far as I know, he owns this account but seeing my guts tells me otherwise.

To be honest, I haven't seen any one of them in person but when Rosie and I used to watch their concert with Samantha unnie from afar, I feel like Jake isn't the type of person to be sweet like this.

I mean, he got mad at Samantha unnie for leaving and studying abroad. It's just that, I feel like this person has a different character, a lighter one. And I like it.

The truth is, I'm not really pressing him to reveal himself. Me talking and conversing with him like this is more than enough. He brightens up my day and I feel like I have someone that makes me happy.

*Happykiddo94: I feel so lonely that you haven't figured it out. Like, Lisa, I've been giving you signs since day one!*

I chuckled at his message.

That's partly true though. However, I am too lazy enough to focus on the signs he'd been giving me.

Me: Oppa, I'm not an Army so don't expect me to figure it out after giving signs and all. You know I'm lazy as shit when it comes to those. *ooops

*Happykiddo94: Bitch *eye rolls*

I giggled at his response.

This is one thing I like about him. He never filters his response to me. I know he was joking but our conversation shows how we have been comfortable with each other.

*Me: At least answer this for me then. Are you one from the dance line?*

*Seen*

I started humming as I wait for his response.

One minute...

Two...

My brows furrowed. Is he already busy?

Somehow, my inside dropped a little, sadness enveloping within me.

Chatting with him had been a daily routine that I noticed how I feel down whenever I don't talk with him.

But then, the man is a superstar. Of course, he would be busy.

With that in consideration, I jumped out of my bed and headed down to my bathroom leaving my phone resting on my bedside table.

He's right. I've been going to parties a lot to make myself forget all my problems. Though he had been telling me that there are so many things I should be happy about, I was in a relationship with my ex for a year. That's not something I can easily forget because as much as it hurts, I fucking loved the guy.

But I think I'm getting there.

I took a quick shower so I can head out and go to my friend's studio. I had started teaching dance lessons with kids, something I loves doing.

Dancing had always been my hobby and it's something I can see myself doing even after I reach 40.

With a towel wrapped around my body, I stepped out of my bathroom and reached for another towel to dry my hair.

My classes don't start until three in the afternoon.

Just as I stepped out of the bathroom, I heard the familiar sound coming from my phone and a huge smile emerged from my lips once again. I've set my ringtone for his messages.

I swiftly made my way towards where my phone was and read his message.

*Happykiddo94: Sorry, I'm in rehearsals hunn. Chat you later. *winks*

*Happykiddo94: Btw, your question, YES, I am from the dance line :)*

So he's either Jason, Haiden or Jake.

That makes it more likely to be Jake. Though I have VOELEVARD in mind, at least I found something interesting today.

"I can probably ask for a few advices in dancing if we ever meet," I whispered to myself.

Yeah, I'd like to see him in person someday.

Soon...

---

# Chapter 40

**Lisa's POV**

*Happykiddo94: Lisa, I swear, I'm so close to hating you. You promised!*pouts*

My hands went to cover my mouth when I read his chat, a lopsided grin showing on my face.

I can sense the frustration on his message, something he never tries to hide whenever I forget to listen to what he said.

For the umpteenth time, I promised to watched their V-live and he told me I'll know when it's him. He'll gave me a sign but I guess he didn't do it since he knows I told him I'll write a comment about me watching it. And of course, he knows my id.

To be honest, I don't really understand why he can't just give me his name. We've been talking for what, almost five months now? Though we don't normally talk regularly due to his busy schedule and sometimes, I get swamped with work too, we still catch up with each other from time to time. However, lately, I've been keeping in touch with him almost every night.

I'm not sure why but we seemed comfortable with each other. Though I don't exactly know who he is out of the seven boys, I'm guessing he isn't Josh oppa nor Yohan oppa because that would be weird. I mean, he calls me with every endearment. I heard Yohan oppa and Samantha unnie's friend - Jessie, are dating.

*Me: Hey, I'm sorry. I totally forgot, I had a full schedule at the studio and I went home late too, *puppy eyes*

*Happykiddo94: Puppy eyes won't work on me since I can't see it anyways. I'm still mad.*

Soft chuckles escaped my lips at how childish yet cute he sounded. This guy, he never fails to make me laugh.

An idea suddenly popped on my head.

After fixing my hair and making sure I at least look okay, I snap a picture of me with my puppy eyes ready. Once satisfied with the photo, I send it to him.

*Me: forgive me oppa* 😗

I laughed a little when I saw him gave a heart on me photo and for some reason, it made my heart flutter.

Why?

I started giggling.

Am I flirting with him?

*Happykiddo94: Do you want me to die of heart attack? *clutching chest*

But what surprised me most was the next message he sent.

*Happykiddo94:* 😊

Loud laughter boomed inside my room when I saw his photo.

It was a photo of his hands doing a finger heart.

I plopped my body on my bed. i just came home from an exhausting day at work.

Happykiddo94: btw, you look so pretty and hot *fanning face

You little flirt.

Me: so, am I forgiven?

A few more weeks passed and we kept on exchanging messages.

*Me: Well I can't promise I can but I will try. I had full load schedule today *pouts*

I laugh a little as I send the message over to him though I am sure he will be upset once he reads it.

And I wasn't wrong.

*Happykiddo94: Wow Lisa. You're a busy woman. You don't even have time for me anymore, *sad face*

You little cutie.

He told me the group will be doing a V-live again and stated that I watch so I'd finally see him, which I will. It's just that, I wanted to annoy him a little because he's cute like that.

He told me he will be waving a plushie three times and I should get it. But he only will if he sees me leaving comments.

I just wanted to surprise him when he sees my id on the comments. It is true though that I have a schedule but I can have the kids on a break once their V-live starts.

Me: Well indeed. I'm a hardworking individual, I hope you realize that. 😒

My eyes wandered on the empty studio before me. It isn't until thirty minutes before my students will arrive and I had already warmed up my body for today's session.

A smile emerged on my lips.

Dancing had always been something I enjoy and being able to do this after finishing my degree makes me really happy.

My Dad is a chef and our family has a stable business, enough for me not to be required to find some work.

Besides, I can simply help with my Mom run the business since I'd like for her to stop working too. However, being hard headed that she is, which a trait I got from her, she told me I should do what I like until she decides that she no longer wants to work and I can take over.

Which both my Dad and I agreed because there's no point in arguing anyways. My mom will always win in the end.

So here I am, fulfilling my passion with dancing by teaching kids and teenagers how to dance.

In all honesty, I have seen a few of VOELEVARD's performances. Thanks to Samantha unnie who made us watch their videos when we were still living in one apartment. Even Rosie was able to watch them no matter how much she tells unnie that she doesn't want to.

We even went in one of their concerts which I enjoyed to be honest. Though I'm not familiar with everything about VOELEVARD, I at least heard a lot of their music and enjoys their dynamic performances.

Heck, I actually love their choreographies - they are amazing!

As a dancer, I can say that they are all so good in dancing, but my eyes always gets attracted to that one person, Jung Haiden.

I mean, Jake and Vash dances so powerful while Jason was flowy. But Haiden, everything about him is perfect if I'm going to talk about technicality.

I know people have their preferences and will say they love the other's more but to me, personally, I'd love to be able to dance with him one day.

The way he moved his body screams passion that touches my very soul as a dancer. And even though I don't know him personally, I have this sense of connection feeling inside me every time I see videos of him dancing.

I must say that I'm a fan and I'd hope to really meet him someday.

But of course, that's after I meet this little flirt.

Four hours...

Finally, I'll know who you are.

---

# Chapter 41

**Haiden's POV**

"Jake, can you just -" A long sigh escaped my lips as I watch our youngest member absentmindedly play with a stuffed toy our fan sent me as a gift, the very same stuff toy I sent a photo with to Lisa.

It's been months since Rosie and him last talk. And ever since the girl left, Jake had never been the same. All of us had been sad about her departure but with Jake, it's different.

They were inseparable.

They love each other.

And I know the two have issues between them, not mostly with their relationship but both have restrictions and walls they need to break free with.

I glance at him with worry when he didn't even realize that I called his name.

Like how it has always been, Jake is fine on our performances, on our fan meets and concerts but once he turned his back to those cameras, to those people who knew would be worried for him, he's almost dead, or maybe almost a robot.

Even to us, he tried so hard to show that he's fine when he's not. If we don't have schedules, he spends his time practicing, almost killing his body.

And it's wrecking us.

It's wrecking me.

It pains to see our youngest, the most playful one building his walls in front of him. And we can't break through. It's sad to know that even though we know what's bothering him, we can't do anything about it, because it's something only him and Rosie have to deal with.

So on times like this, I can't really do anything but support him.

"Hey guys, we'll start with the V-live in two minutes! I'm excited to talk our fans!" Vash came bouncing, and like always, unaware about the current situation. And we're glad. Sometimes, all we need is someone like Vash so we can temporarily forget what's happening, what's hurting and bothering us. Besides, even Josh hyung just recently came back to his usual self after Samantha and her finally made up.

This team is in a total mess these days and my insides felt so heavy because I can't fix it. I can't fix everything.

I shifted on my seat when Jason cme running towards me.

"Aistt!" I snickered and he just grinned at me. Sometimes, Jason and Vash is too much to handle. Usually, it's the three youngest but given Jake's situation, it feels like nothing had change because taming Jason and Vash is almost taking care of us seven.

And then there's Lisa.

A smile came across my lips upon remembering the girl I had been communicating with. She had been nothing but a sweetheart. She's so sweet and fun to chat with. And though we haven't met each other before, I feel like I already knew everything about her. She's that transparent.

And I love it about her. With her, I can be me. I can be sweet without her being offended or anything. With her, I can joke around comfortably and she's the same with me.

I'm glad she's open. She tells me her concerns and she lets me help her feel better.

And moreover, she's beautiful.

I bit my lower lip upon remembering our previous conversation.

The girl has serious working issues. She's so workaholic to the point that she always forgets it every time I tell her to watch our V-live so I can finally introduce myself to her.

To be honest, I could have told her I'm Jung Haiden.

But I'm not sure why I can't seem to just tell it directly to her.

Am I afraid she won't treat me the same? I don't know, Maybe.

Even I have insecurities of my own.

I know she's not a fan but I can't help but be afraid she won't be the same once she found out it was me.

I mean, everyone the rest of VOELEVARD first except me. And I felt it even more when I did a V-live before.

They don't want me. They want somebody else.

To be honest, it's the boys, the fans who continuously shows their appreciation towards me and my love for what I am doing is what keeps me going.

It hurts.

It fucking hurts to be neglected.

It burns like a hole when people don't give importance to you or appreciate you even after you gave your all. What hurts the most is, I can't even tell it to them. I can't say that I'm hurting.

Because I'm Haiden.

I'm their Haiden, their angel. I'm their sunshine.

Haiden can't be mad.

Well fuck, I should have named myself something else instead. Maybe then I will have the right to tell people that I'm hurting too.

"Hyung!"

I was startled when Jason nudged me on the shoulders, his hand pointing at the camera.

Oh shit.

I was spacing out too much, I didn't even realize that the V-live had been on.

"Hi everyone!" I greeted, a huge smile showing on my face.

My eyes snapped on Jake's direction when he greeted our fans and realized that he still has my stuffed toy in his hands.

Should I get it?

Lisa said she might not see the V-live anyways.

With that in thought, I decided to let Jake play with it.

It should be okay right?

Of all the days, it'll be really weird if Lisa would suddenly watch the V-live after she missed it multiple times and even confirmed that she's busy.

Yeah, it should be fine.

With that, I faced our fans with a huge grin on my face.

They are here to see VOELEVARD anyways. And Haiden is part of VOELEVARD.

Right now, I'm Haiden...

---

# Chapter 42

**Lisa's POV**

"So it was you..." I whispered before finally putting down my phone on the flat surface, my bad leaning on the glassed wall as I wait for my students to come back after sending them for quite a long break so I can watch VOELEVARD's V-live. I had a feeling it might be him because he was the one who sent a message to Samantha unnie before but I don't know. Somehow, there is a weird feeling inside me that I can't seem to point out.

Contrary to what I promised, I didn't leave a comment so he'd see I was watching. I'm not sure why but somehow, I feel like I wasn't ready to tell him that I finally know who he was.

Was I disappointed? I don't know.

Was I expecting someone else? I'm not sure.

But when I was watching, I keep thinking about how it shouldn't be him.

Not that I don't like him but I feel like I wasn't really as comfortable as when we chat on Instagram.

I just...

I just don't get the feeling.

I don't feel quite comfortable.

And I'm not sure I like it.

A long sigh escaped my lips.

What is this I'm feeling? I should be thankful I found someone like him.

He had been nothing but a sweetheart and here I am not being happy after finding out who he was. Sure he is handsome, well-built and yeah, charming, but I just...

I bite my lower lip in frustration.

Why?

Why am I feeling like this?

Why does it feel like he wasn't the same person?

Just when I decided to go show myself to him, why am I having second thoughts?

My hands reached for my phone and dialed Samantha unnie's number.

I waited.

First ring...

Second...

And when she picked up, "Unnie..."

I have decided.

"I'm coming in three days. See you..." I whispered.

I'm going to meet Jeon Jake. Maybe then, maybe when I see him in person, this weird feeling will go away.

Even after the day of my flight came, I am still reluctant and not excited about it.

I pulled my jumper a little, fixing the hem as I walk nervously.

Jake didn't know I am coming. The last time we were chatting, I told him I will be away for a vacation and I'm surprised he didn't ask me where.

A huge smile showed on my face as I slowly reached the Arrival area. Samantha unnie told me beforehand that Rosie will also be arriving and since I haven't seen the girl for like ages, I was more than excited.

I guess this trip is really worth it.

After filing an indefinite leave on my job and telling Samantha unnie about it, I book a flight to Korea in instant.

A lot of people were excitedly rushing before me and my eyes went wide when I reached the end and saw the two.

Samantha unnie and Rosie were smiling as their eyes scanned the people going out, probably searching for me.

"Unnies!!!!" I can't help it, I squealed so loud a few of the passengers raised their eyebrows while looking at me.

I shrugged my shoulders in embarrassment.

I'm excited, okay.

"Lisa!!!" Rosie whisper-shouted excitedly as both her and Samantha unnie run towards me for a hug.

In no time, we were jumping up and down as the three of us hug each other. It took us a whole five minutes before we can calm down.

"Lisa, you got taller!" Rosie nudged me by the shoulder and I just rolled my eyes at her.

Rosie and I are of the same age and maybe because of that, we banter a lot when we were still living in the same house. Even so, I know we still have each other's backs.

I know that no matter how many fights we have, I love her and she loves me the same.

I eyed at her wearily, noticing the glow emitting on her face.

"You got prettier. Do you have a boyfriend?" I raised my eyebrow at her and I noticed how her cheeks turned red, Samantha unnie's faint laughter can be heard behind us.

We were just waiting for the car to arrive.

Once it arrives and our luggage was already loaded at the back, the three of us ended up talking non-stop while on our way to God knows where.

"Jessie is such a sweetheart. The two of you will surely love her," Samantha unnie excitedly told us and both Rosie and me smiled.

The girl had been talking about her other friend nonstop and I feel like I already know her by heart.

"By the way, I'm sure the boys already knew you're here Chaeng. I don't even know why but their fans always tag my photos to their account as if I'd be missing any minute," Samantha unnie stated and I chuckled. I know she and Josh oppa were in a relationship so it doesn't surprise me one bit.

"Oh right, I heard you stayed with them on their tour bus. How was it?" I asked a little too excitedly. Jake once told me about it but we never really talk about it into more details.

It has been three days but finally calling the person I usually chat with having a name still doesn't sit with me.

She looked surprised at my question but the car halted in front of what seemed like a hotel or apartment building, and we all hop down the car before following Samantha unnie as she headed straight to the elevator.

While inside the elevator, I fiddled with my hands in nervousness.

Jake will be shocked, wouldn't he?

Just then, Rosie turned to my direction, confusion masking her face.

"Hey, Lisa, how did you know I stayed with them?" she asked confused, the sound of the elevator opening can be heard.

---

# Chapter 43

**Lisa's POV**

"Hey, Lisa, how did you know I stayed with them?" she asked confused, the sound of the elevator opening can be heard.

I gulped. For some reason, I felt nervous about sharing the information with her.

Rosie never really liked Jake after all that had happened with Samantha unnie.

"Well, someone close to me told me about it," I just whispered hoping she would let it go. She tilted her head as if thinking of something but didn't ask any more questions.

I sigh in relief.

Soon enough, the three of us were standing in front of the door and my heart started beating rapidly.

How will he react?

I had openly shared my photos with him before so I know she'd recognized me in instant.

My hand reached for my chest, the fast rate of my heartbeat can be heard.

I didn't even notice that Samantha unit already had the door opened and I immediately followed Samantha funny, my mind blanked for a moment.

Once I entered, I noticed how a lot of things were scattered proving me that there are indeed boys who are living in this unit.

And then my eyes landed at the two people cuddling on the bean bag facing the door.- Jessie and Yohan oppa. they were sleeping while hugging each other, and my heart fluttered at how adorable they look.

I never really had a firsthand contact with any of them except for Josh oppa whom we always see everytime Samantha unnie was video calling him when she was having a vacation with us. However, I'm still pretty much familiar with every one of them since I had seen them perform before and watched a lot of their videos which Samantha unnie had forced us before.

The guy, whom I was able to identify as Jason, who was sitting on the couch saw us first.

"Oh," he mumbled, unable to utter the right words. His eyes landed on me, then landed back on Rosie's direction.

Due to Jason's reaction, Rome and Vash soon followed his gazed only to show the same reactions.

"Where are the others?" Samantha unnie asked as we all move forward towards them.

I was too nervous I barely have time to appreciate the surroundings before me. Of course, it was big but I don't think I am in my right state to appreciate the place at this moment.

I wonder where he is.

And as if on cue, Josh oppa emerged from what it seems like a kitchen. A smile came to my lips. I finally saw the person who made my Samantha unnie happy.

And then my eyes caught Jung Haiden's form and I don't know why but I feel like I started blushing a little.

I had always admired him even before due to his dancing and seeing him right now made me feel even giddier.

Stop it, Lisa. You came here for Jake.

My brows furrowed a little when Haiden oppa looked shocked at the sight of me but I simply brushed it off.

I have no time to fan girl right now.

Soon enough, the very reason why I came here for suddenly emerged from the kitchen, his eyes focused before him and if not for Haiden oppa who stopped walking, he wouldn't feel the need to look around after he almost bumped into him.

There he is.

He looked shocked but the giddy me failed to recognize the mixed emotion showing on his face.

I failed to notice how his lips quivered at the sight of Rosie.

All I had in mind was how I had been conversing with him for a long time...

How he was so kind and understanding to me...

How he was there when I needed someone...

Forget about the feeling of doubts and second thoughts...

All I had in mind is how he was finally there, a few inches away from me.

So with that in thought, I screamed out his name and run towards the person who I thought I knew.

"Jake!" I screamed happily as I rush towards him, my arms wide engulfing him in a big hug.

I was too excited, I didn't even notice his own reaction and the reaction of everyone with us.

A wide smile was showing on my face, the weird feeling still lingering my chest but I still brush the thought. Until I heard his voice screaming a name we're both familiar with.

And it's not mine.

"Rosie!"

My stomach started churning and the feeling of something unlikely is about to happened shook my system really hard.

Nothing is about to go wrong, isn't it?

---

# Chapter 44

**Haiden's POV**

My mouth hangs wide open at the sight of her.

The way her bangs hugs her beautiful face, her lips stretched over for a smile that made my heart waver, she looks so perfect.

She was smiling widely, her face adorned with little makeup which I don't really mind because she looks absolutely stunning.

My heart started doing somersaults, the shocked look on my face was probably inevitable because I can't seem to fathom what's happening.

She's here...

How? Airplane, I know but...

My mind was lost for a moment. She never told me she's coming.

A laugh almost escaped my mouth in disbelief.

The girl I used to converse with over the phone is finally here, in front of me. All flesh and unbothered.

I was too mesmerized with her beauty that I failed to realized how she was paying attention not to me but to someone else.

Just when I was about to speak, her excited voice resonated the whole room and the next thing I know was her jumping over our youngest, "Jake!"

My eyes widened at her action and even Jake seemed shocked.

The room was silent but what concerned me even more is how Rosie looked shocked, a painful expression showing on her face, before she turned on her heels and run away.

"Rosie!" Jake screamed for her name only to be stopped by Lisa who is looking so confused, her hands clinging onto him.

My blood boil for a moment.

How did they know each other? And why didn't Jake nor Lisa told me anything about it?

My eyes caught the changes on Jake's expression. And then I saw him push her away.

"Jake!" I can't help but reprimand him.

Lisa seemed taken aback and I had to resist the urge to pull her away from Jake.

Maybe due to my sudden calling, Jake calm down a little before leaving a long sigh. He looks straight at Lisa and I suddenly felt weird about it.

"I'm sorry, I legit have no idea who the fuck you are but please, don't ever touch me again," my eyes almost jumped out of its sockets at Jake's words.

Oh, shit. What's happening? I thought to myself.

And then Jake continued and the words coming out of his mouth broke my heart a little. I feel for Lisa

"I don't like anybody touching me like that without my permission,"

"Jake..." Samantha called him and by now, everyone looked shocked. However, Jake has other plans. As he was about to move away, my eyes caught how Lisa stopped him by the arm.

"You don't know me?" she asked confused and I'm not sure why but I suddenly felt nervous.

Jake removed her hand from his and shook his head.

"Then am I communicating with a ghost for half a year?" she said dejectedly. Her voice came out as a whisper but I heard her voice cracking at the end.

After hearing her words, I felt like a large bucket of ice was thrown straight to my face.

*She thought Jake was me?*

"I'm sorry I know you look really confused but I can't answer your questions right now because I need to find Rosie," Jake told her, giving her an awkward smile before bowing.

My lower lip was tucked between my teeth as I saw how sad she looked like and I'm not dumb enough not to notice how her eyes were starting to moist.

Jake must have realized that there was a misunderstanding because he gently grabs her by the shoulder and talked to her. His voice calmer than before.

"Look, I'm sorry about earlier. I didn't intend to push you or shout at you but I'm sure my noona would be able to help you clear things out. See you later," Jake finished before tapping Lisa's shoulder.

This would probably the first time but I wanted to smack Jake's head for once. I no longer care what Jake was doing as my eyes were only focused on her.

Why did she thought she was talking with Jake?

And then my eyes saw the stuff toy resting on top of the couch, and then looked at her.

She didn't watch the V-live right?

I groan internally as realization hit me. She thought I was Jake because she saw the stuff toy.

"Yah, Jake! You're not wearing any mask!" Josh hyung shouted.

"Yah, Samantha, talk to your brother. He'll going to cause an uproar outside once fans see him," I heard Josh hyung but I didn't look back.

"You did the same to me, remember? And not only that, you've included your fans when you were searching for me at the airport," Samantha replied but I wasn't paying attention.

Before I knew it, I was already whispering her name. "Lisa..."

Her head snapped to my direction, her eyes wide but I noticed how her cheeks were red in embarrassment.

Before I knew it, my hands reached for hers pulling her towards where my room is.

I didn't care how she was looking so confused all over and how Samantha was calling both our names.

All I care is how she looks so lost... How she looks like she thought was played...How she looks so broken.... How she looked scared... And how I unknowingly hurt....

All I care right now is Her.

The moment we reached my room, I closed the door and faced her. She was looking so helpless and it broke me. I remember how she was pouring her emotions to me when she was emotionally unstable but now, I became the reason why she looks so broken once again.

So I did what I thought is best at this moment.

I hug her.

---

# Chapter 45

**Jake's POV**

"Rosie!" I screamed for her name only to be stopped by a confused girl who was clinging to me like a glue.

My blood boiled at the sight of her, my eyes changing its colors and in an instant, I released her arms around me, pushing her a little.

"Jake!" I heard Haiden hyung reprimanded but I was so confused about what's happening, I didn't realize that I must have hurt the girl.

A long sigh escaped my lips before looking at her straight in the eyes.

From what I can see, she seemed like an acquaintance of both my noona and Rosie.

"I'm sorry, I legit have no idea who the fuck you are but please, don't ever touch me again," I can't help but scowl at the poor girl but my voice was enveloped with both sarcasm and frustration.

I was staring at her coldly and I was sure the air surrounding both of use froze at the intensity of my glaze. "I don't like anybody touching me like that without my permission," I told her and she backed away a little, the moist in her eyes tells me she was taken aback.

Or was it fear I saw?

"Jake..." Samantha noona called for my name and I noticed how everyone was looking at both of us dumbfounded.

My hands balled into a fist and I made a step away from them but I felt her grab me by the hand.

"You don't know me?" she asked confused and somehow, I felt pity towards the girl as I stare at her sad expression. Little by little, it seems like she was realizing that she was deceived.

I removed her hand from mine and shook my head, trying to act cool. The way I see it, she was mistaking me for someone else.

There seemed to be a misunderstanding.

"Then am I communicating with a ghost for half a year?" she said dejectedly. Her voice came out as a whisper but I heard everything, even the way her voice cracked in the middle.

I wasn't sure if she was joking but right now, I am not the best person to help her. However, I noticed how among the guys, Haiden hyung seemed to be acting the most suspicious.

By this time, Jessie and Yohan hyung were already awake and Josh hyung was hugging my noona.

Vash hyung had that confused expression on his face as well as Jason hyung. Even Rome hyung had that bewildered expression on his face.

"I'm sorry I know you look really confused but I can't answer your questions right now because I need to find Rosie," I told her, giving her an awkward smile before bowing. Hearing her words made me feel at ease in her presence. Suddenly, I felt bad for pushing her earlier and acting harshly towards her.

I noticed her eyes, they were big but I have this feeling that they'd look beautiful if she smiles.

This time, I gently grab her shoulders, a smile emerging on my face.

"Look, I'm sorry about earlier. I didn't intend to push you or shout at you but I'm sure my noona would be able to help you clear things out. See you later," I told her before tapping her shoulders.

Without even bothering to bid goodbye to the others, quickly run towards the door to wear my shoes.

I actually just got home from meeting my 97' liner friends.

"Hey, Jake! You're not wearing any mask!" Josh hyung shouted but I no longer care.

Shit.

Rosie must have gone far already.

Now I regret staying for a little longer. I should have taken a run the moment she went out.

"Hey, Samantha, talk to your brother. He'll going to cause an uproar outside once fans see him," I heard Josh hyung explained to my sister in which she replied with the usual sassiness that I never knew she had.

"You did the same to me, remember? And not only that, you've included your fans when you were searching for me at the airport," she replied and I smiled while trying the knot of my shoelace.

"Lisa..." I heard Haiden hyung called for the girl but I already went and run outside.

The moment my eyes caught Rosie's form earlier, my whole world seemed to stop.

My heart was beating so fast I wasn't sure if I was still breathing properly.

Her aura changed...

It was lighter like she was a lot more okay than the last time I saw her.

She was still as beautiful as my eyes can remember, or perhaps, more beautiful than before. But for me, my heart flutters the same.

Four months...

Those four months are the most painful days of my life. Not seeing her beautiful face, not hearing her voice, not feeling her touch...everything.

Seeing her makes everything surreal.

How was I able to last for that long?

When we agreed not to talk with each other for a month, I almost snapped.

For weeks, I spent all of my free time practicing so I won't grab my phone and call her.

Is she thinking about me?

Is she eating well?

Moreover, I Haiden she wasn't lonely or crying.

Every day, I was counting every minute until one month finally passes. The moment it did, I grab my phone to call her only to be greeted by an operator informing me that the number is no longer available.

I got scared.

Did she change her mind?

Did her feelings change?

I was dying to know but at the same time, I'm afraid to find out that she no longer feels the same.

I busied myself with practice. I spend my free time going out with my other friends. I did everything to get her off my mind.

But I wasn't successful.

Every night, she slips into my mind and even in my dreams.

I know I wasn't okay, I'd wake up in the middle of the night, tears streaming down my cheeks. And it's breaking me.

I missed her.

And just when I was starting to get back on my feet, there she goes, as beautiful as I remember, standing a few feet away from me.

The moment our eyes locked, I knew what her answer was.

She's back.

She came back for me.

But everything went downhill when the girl named Lisa suddenly jumped over me. I was too shocked to even react immediately and I wanted to smack myself for being careless.

"Rosie, where are you?" I asked myself.

By this time, I was already at the lobby, running while checking if she's among the crowd.

From the corner of my eyes, I saw one of our managers spitting down his coffee the moment he saw me running outside but I don't care.

I need to see my baby.

Fuck Rosie, I miss you.

I'm coming babe, wait for me.

---

# Chapter 46

**Rosie's POV**

"You are so stupid Rosie!" I started scolding myself after I turned and run away from Jake. I slapped myself multiple times as if that would help me pull myself back together.

It was when I was already a few blocks outside when a realization hit me, I am not familiar with this place.

My eyes scanned the area.

I don't even have my phone nor pouch with me.

Slowly, I started walking back to the direction where I came from, my left hand wiping the tear that stupidly started falling down my cheeks. My mind feels like I'm just floating. Everything was a blur and my eyes stinging isn't much of a help either.

I felt helpless and weak. My knees were shaking I'm actually surprised I'm still able to walk.

I noticed a few people giving me weird looks.

Yeah, I probably look some idiot right now, crying on a sidewalk at four in the afternoon.

So what if Jake already moved on?

"I am still friends with the other boys," I whispered to myself but even I can recognize how bitter my own words sounded.

My steps halted, and I almost fell down when someone accidentally bumped into me from the back.

"Watch where you're going!" the guy snarled at me and I don't have any strength left to answer. Instead, I walked to the side, away from the crowd so I won't cause a ruckus on the busy street in front of me.

"What's the use of coming back now?" I whispered as I rested my back on the wall for support. I bite my lower lip, my throat hurting as I try to stop myself from bawling my eyes out on the busy district of Seoul.

Unfocused with my surroundings, I ended up sitting on the ground, my arms hugging my knees, the questioning stares that the people are giving me goes unnoticed by my unstable state.

And right here I started crying. The recent events made me question myself.

Am I that of a bad person to be always left behind?

Do I deserve this amount of pain?

Was the pain of losing a friend and a brother isn't enough that life decided to test me once again by taking away the very first person I showed loved with from me?

Am I that much of a pushover?

My judgment is now getting clouded.

Maybe I really deserve all this pain... and its karma but damn, it was all out to losing my sanity, breaking every piece of me, shredding my dignity altogether. Right now, there's nothing left but emptiness.

Did he lie about waiting for me?

I mean, I knew it took me four fucking months but shit. is it that easy for him to forget about me?

Did he really love me at all?

Faint sobs escaped my lips, the sorrow filling my whole system is starting to make me lose control.

He loved me. I told to myself.

No matter how he might be in a new relationship right now, I knew he loved me when we were still together.

Because I felt it.

His sincerity...

His patience...

His love...

I felt it all.

I knew he loved me. But it hurts to know that his love faded while here I am, still stuck on my own feelings.

My heart has weakened. The new resolve I had after moving on from my past started crumbling before me.

I'm not even sure my heart is ready for this heartbreak.

But then, no one is ever ready for a heartache. Mine felt like it's barely functioning, and it's drunken with pain.

My sane thoughts started to slip away and the remaining strength that I have in me slowly fading, and I think this isn't a foreign state for me since I was barely breathing before Jake came and saved me.

I thought Jake has found me when I was lost, but I guess it was temporary. Because in the end, it was me who needs to find my own self.

I thought I can be by his side. but it turns out I need to be alone until I can spread my own wings, break free and fly.

Even with a bitter heart, even with an empty fall back, I'd move forward.

And then I felt a liquid dropping on my bare skin, my eyes immediately looking up the sky.

It was dark and I can see drizzles slowly starting to pour.

"Great, now even the weather is sympathizing with me," I grunted.

But my body doesn't seem to feel bothered by the cold as I start to feel numb.

"Fuck," I mumbled.

The pain inside me, it's unbearable. It feels a thousand more painful like I was left with nothingness. It was like I am falling down on a black hole and I don't know if I can still cease to exist.

With my face on my hands as I keep from crying.

The drizzle started getting stronger until it was already raining. But I didn't move even after all the people came rushing to find shelter out of the rain.

I stayed on the sidewalk hoping that the rain will wash away the pain that is killing me.

My heart felt so empty. And even though the cold rush of the rain made my body shiver, deep inside, I felt nothing.

I don't have any place to go and right now, I'd need a whole lot of courage to get back and get my things from their dorm.

Lisa...

I suddenly remembered my friend. She must have been confused right now.

Not a bit do I resent my friend for being with the person I love. It has been so long since we last saw each other and judging from how she acted earlier when she saw me, I was sure Lisa didn't know a thing.

She's a sweetheart, a pure little ball of sunshine. I can never get mad at her.

To be honest, I'm madder at myself for neglecting Jake.

It was all my fault. I know I was just so stupid to let what we had all go to waste. Or maybe I had been too complacent?

My hands balled into a fist.

Am I strong enough to let him go?

Looking back, I don't regret ever hopping that bus and meeting him and saving him from his fans.

And even though I am hurting like hell right now, I'd still say I love him. If my pain is what it takes for him to be happy, I'd gladly take it all.

This time, I want to be the person who sacrificed for him.

Because I want him to be happy...

---

# Chapter 47

**Rosie's POV**

I didn't know how long it has been but after a while, I realized the drips of the rain falling on my body weakened.

Did the rain stop?

Slowly, I removed my hands covering my face, I had to rub my eyes for a moment because it becomes blurry due to my continuous crying.

As I focus my vision in front of me, I was greeted by a pair of Timberland shoes.

In an instant, my heart which I thought had stopped beating earlier started hammering inside my chest. Slowly, I lifted my gaze and my eyes saw the serious expression on his face, his hands were leaning on the wall as he tried to cover me with his body shielding me from the rain.

"Jake..." I whispered and I noticed the painful expression showing on his face.

Was he having a hard time because of me? Because he's feeling guilty I was crying?

Immediately, I stood up from the ground, my body swaying a little as my knees got wobbly from sitting for too long. before I fall further, his strong arms wrapped around my body in support.

"Are you okay?" his voice hoarse and I had to close my eyes once again to restrain myself from lunging my body over his.

His hands suddenly cupped my cheeks and I can't help it, my tears started streaming down my cheeks, unable to handle the emotion building inside me.

He pulled me closer, our foreheads touching but that didn't help me from controlling my emotions.

Why did he have to act like this, acting like he cares?

"Jake, you don't need to be here," I told him, pushing him a little but he didn't move.

I'm not even sure why but I felt a little happy because it seems like he really cared but then, the smiling image of Lisa came flashing on my mind.

"Jake, please... stop this. You'll just make it harder for me. I get it. You moved on. I'd probably have a lot of sleepless nights moving forward but it's okay, I'd soon manage. So don't feel bad about everything," I told him but my heart aches to spit those words.

His eyes bore into mine and his beautiful face creases as a little as if not understanding what I was trying to say.

My hands reached for his hands cupping my cheeks, a forced smile emerged on my face. "This won't break me, Jake. I will get better. I promise." I told him.

He stared at me incredulously as if the words coming out of my mouth are disgusting and I don't know if I should feel offended.

"Who gave you the fucking idea that I'd let you move on from me, Park Rosie?" he whispered and my heart clenched at the sound of him calling my name. Because I have this feeling that this will be the last time I'd ever hear him call my name.

Wait, what did he just say?

"What?" I asked him confused. Is he trying to tell me he won't let me go even though he's with Lisa now?

"Look Rosie, I didn't spend my four months killing my body from practice, sulking by myself waiting you would come back like what you've promised just to get involved with someone I only met just a few minutes ago," he stated with pleading eyes that break my heart and my mouth hangs wide open at his words.

"What do you mean?" Please don't give me false Haiden Jake, I wanted to add but I decided not to.

He pushes his hair back, a few drops of rain dripping down his face and I will be lying if I don't say that didn't turn me on because it did.

"That girl, Lisa, I just saw her today. She's not my girlfriend or anything and I think she may have confused me with someone else," he started explaining and I can't help but Haiden we still have a chance.

"But why did she hug you?" I asked him and he grunted.

"I don't know but I think that has something to do with one of the boys but I swear, I didn't hug her back!" he said exasperatedly and I knew he was telling the truth.

Come to think of it, he was also taken aback earlier. Why didn't I notice that?

"Park Rosie, you should know before you left four months ago that I am deeply in love with you, it's actually scary. Just the thought of not being able to see you anymore almost made me snapped. I am so close to forcing my sister into telling me where you live." he started blabbering and in a flash, my helpless state skyrocketed giving me high spirits.

He loves me.

Jeon Jake still loves me.

"If you didn't come back. I'm sure I'm an inch closer to heading to Australia and beg on my knees so you would take me back. I love you Rosie. I had been the moment I first made eye

contact with you the first time during our tour. You don't even know how my heart almost leaped out of my chest when you suddenly kissed me," he added.

Before I knew it, my tears once again started streaming down my cheeks. My eyes caught a few people starting to crowd a few meters away from us and if not for what seemed to be the people stopping and barricading the area, they would have come closer.

My eyes widened when I realized that those people were the staffs from when I was in the tour bus.

That's when I noticed that the rain had already stopped.

My cheeks blushed after realizing that a few people had already been recording us. I almost forgot that Jake is one-seventh of Voelevard, one of the most famous Kpop group not only in Korea but all over the world. Of course, people will recognize him.

"Jake..." I tried to get his attention. We'll probably be in the headlines of every Kpop website any minute and I got scared for a moment. What if his fans get mad?

"Don't mind them. I don't care if the whole world finds out I have a girlfriend as long as I don't lose you. Now I finally understand why Josh hyung did that," he stated before pulling me for a hug.

We heard a few teenagers squealing while the other seemed like sobbing and somehow, I felt a little bad. I knew how fans are very possessive with their idols.

His arms were wrapped around my body as he swayed back and forth, and even though we were both drenched from the rain, the heat coming from his body is enough to make me feel warm.

"I love you Rosie, and don't ever think I'll stop because I won't. You'll probably get tired of me telling you that over and over but I don't care. I love you with all that I have and just having you makes me feel like I already have everything," he stated and my heart fluttered at his words, my arms wrapping around his body the same way as I bury my face to his chest.

"I love you too...." I whispered. My heart is now at peace and having him in my arms after so fucking long made me feel like I was high

"Don't do that again..." he said and I heard his voice cracked.

"Do what?" I asked as I rub his back to comfort him.

"Running away from me... I was scared I won't be able to find you. I don't even care if my manager is going ballistic. I can't lose you Rosie. You're all that's keeping me together." he stated and I my arms tightened around his body.

"I'm sorry Jake. I thought you moved on." I told him. " I thought being away is what will make you happy when I thought you and Lisa are now together," I added.

He pulled away a little so he can stare at my face. I'm sure I look like a mess already but seeing how he looks at me makes me feel so confident about myself.

He brushed a few strands of my hair to my side that is covering my face.

"I can only be happy with you babe... We will stay together, fight together, dance and sing side by side. I will always stay with you. We will be whoever we are and we will be happy together," My heart melting at his words.

He smiled at me and I felt contented.

"Jake that's enough show!" I heard Josh oppa's voice and both Jake and I turned to the side and realized that the rest of the guys are also on the ground.

A few of their fans were flustered and crying. I can't blame them. It's not every day you'll be able to see seven boys of Voelevard, in flesh and standing among the crowd.

"Hey, I can't believe you topped what I did to your noona. How dare you!" Josh oppa joked and Samantha unnie laughed as she walked forward to us with Lisa and Jessie with her.

The rest of the boys followed the crowd started to get wild once again.

"Come here," Samantha unnie called for me before covering my body with a huge towel. "The two of you made quite a scene huh?" she stated and my cheeks flushed after I saw how the boys were teasing Jake.

I noticed Lisa staring at the ground. I moved forward and pulled her into a hug.

"Are you okay?" I asked her. Though I don't know what exactly happened, I am concern about her. She seemed so sad.

"Sorry Rosie, I didn't mean what happened earlier. I didn't know," she whispered and I knew she was crying.

I rubbed her back to calm her down.

"It's fine Lisa. Stop thinking about it." I told her.

My eyes caught Jessie's smiling face.

"Hi," I greeted her and she smiled before pulling me for a hug after I released Lisa.

"Nice to finally meet you," she greeted and I feel like having a new best friend.

After a while, my eyes locked with Jake, and just a smile from him is enough for me to be assured that everything will work out just fine.

Though I'm sure this will cost the boys some scolding seeing the crowd had already enclosed the whole area and it will be hard for us to go back.

Jake moved closer and his right hand intertwined with mine.

"I love you..." he whispered before giving me a peck on my forehead.

Our relationship had been full of flaws... from sexual tension to the purest love I had never imagined.

Finally, I've found my shelter, my home...

---

# Chapter 48

**Lisa's POV**

"So what's your plan?" Samantha unnie asked and I shrugged my shoulders, mind unclear on what my next step should be at this point.

Me going to Korea is probably the craziest thing ever. Not only one but a lot of things didn't go according to what I envision it would be.

The surprise that I thought will bring me closer to the person I thought I knew ended up being the reason why a few people had been aloof towards me.

First, I almost messed up Rosie's relationship with Jake. Thank God they were able to fix it and Jake didn't hold any animosity against me for what happened. I'm so glad Rosie found a good man.

Second, I can't simply go back to Thailand because truthfully, aside from my parents, I don't really have anything special to look forward to in getting back to my home country - at least not this time.

And third, Jung Haiden. Imagine my shock when the missing piece of the puzzle was dropped on my face like a bomb.

I can still remember the day he pulled me for a hug. I was lost and confused about what happened.

Believing that the person I was communicating with was Jake, I jumped over the guy and almost made a huge mess.

Or I might have actually done because Jake turned out to be on the headlines of every news articles and even televisions. The video of him confessing to Rosie under the rain won the hearts of many.

I happy for my friend and thank God she understood because I won't be able to forgive myself if she ended up hurting because of me.

"Lisa, stop overthinking. I'm sure Haiden meant no harm and I hope you two talk this out," Rosie tried appeasing my devastated demeanor but to no avail I still feel shitty inside.

The moment I realized why Haiden was hugging me, I pushed him real hard and he was startled. I didn't even let him explain. I pushed him and run past him.

After all of the mess that I had created, I don't think I can really talk to him at this point.

It feels like I was back from the beginning were we technically really didn't know anything.

I understood. It's more than enough, but that doesn't mean I am glad about what happened.

Deceived, that's how I felt. But seeing him looking at me apologetically made me hold back a little.

"It's partly your fault too, Lisa-yah. His username says 94. You should have checked. That's either Rome or Haiden. But he told you he's part of the dance line, that should have been very clear. It's not like you can't google them," Samantha unnie pouted.

I groan rather loudly at her words.

Why have I been so stupid?

She has a point.

Just then, I heard someone clearing his throat and we all turned towards the door and saw Jake peeking his head, eyes focused on his girlfriend.

"Sorry to interrupt but can I borrow my beautiful girlfriend for a second?" he smiled and my cheeks blushed. I'm still ashamed for what I did last time and I'm very thankful for both him and Rosie for being understanding.

Rosie immediately stood up from her seat and Samantha unnie snickered.

"Wow, look at him forgetting his beloved sister after getting himself a girlfriend. Yah! You loved me first!" Jake chuckled at his sister's antics and by now, the lovers had been hugging each other.

"Noona, you have a boyfriend yet I never complained," he then turned his eyes on me, a soft expression showing on his face. I know he still feels bad for treating me roughly but I don't feel hate towards the man.

"Lisa..." a long sigh escaped his lips. "I know it's probably not my place to talk but please, give Haiden hyung a chance to explain himself. You two have been talking for so long so you should know it was never his intention to hurt you," he stated I saw Rosie smiling at me.

"If this makes you feel better, I can guarantee you that Haiden oppa is more of a gentleman than Jake," she mumbled and Jake whined.

"Wow. After what I did for you, this is what I get?"

My attention is no longer focused on the two but on my phone as I read the last message he has sent on our chat.

*Happykiddo94: I'm sorry*

What should I do?

---

# Chapter 49

**Haiden's POV**

"She's good, isn't she?" My eyes snapped towards Rome's direction, his eyes glued to the form of the girl who had been dancing endlessly since earlier this morning.

It has been two hours and I'm worried she'd be dehydrated. I never once saw her drink a sip of water. She was too focused I don't think she realized that she's attracted quite an attention from a few trainees already. Even the other artists are checking her out.

She was wearing a black sleeveless crop top and a black shorts paired with a Timberland shoes. Her blonde hair going all over the place yet her swift and graceful moves made her look a thousand times appealing than others - at least for me.

Looking at her now, having her close like this is very fascinating. I never once thought I'd see her this close. I mean, yeah, I have thought and dream about it but I didn't know it will be this soon. If I knew any sooner, I should have cleared out everything from the beginning.

I watch as she did a good fucking turn, making some of the trainees with her gasp in surprise and admiration.

She can dance. Heck, she is so good in dancing. Watching her is mesmerizing and I cannot question why a lot of them are staring at her right now. To be honest, I', not feeling all too good about what's happening. It's annoying me but what can I do about it? It's not like I can claim her. Even before she came her, I am nothing but someone she exchanged messages with over the phone.

Who am I to her?

But watching her now, I have so many regrets over what happened. Why didn't I ever ask what her work is? Or maybe I did but she never answered.

After the incident, she hasn't really talked to me. I apologized through messages but all I receive is an indication that she has read it. Whenever we are with people, she just nods her head in acknowledgement but never really talk to me.

Samantha told me to give her time but isn't it too much?

I mean, I didn't really plan on not telling her or deceiving her. It was a plain misunderstanding and I apologized. Or was I being just insensitive over everything. I know I probably hurt her but again, it wasn't my intention. I didn't know she was thinking like that.

If I actually know, I should have told her from the start.

What more does she need?

"Have you two settled your issues? It been so long Haiden," he mumbled and I groan. Rome was studying my expression and to be honest, I feel so bare when I am with him. Since we are of the same age, we are the most comfortable when we are together.

I avoided his gaze. Somehow, I feel uncomfortable now that he's talking about Lisa. Or maybe Lisa has become a sensitive aspect or topic to me now.

The boys had been asking me about it. Vash even went to asking me how we started texting. Jason and Vash had been an ass ever since. They keep teasing me about having a crush on Lisa.

I can't lie about it though. Lisa, she's very beautiful. Even an idol will put in shame if they stand together.

A long sigh escaped my lips.

"She won't talk with me..." I mumbled, crossing my arms as I openly watch her before me.

Damn, she's such a beauty. How can she dance so gracefully yet elegantly like that?

The sound of Rome chuckling caught my attention so I turned my attention back to him.

"So does that limits you? Don't you have other things under your sleeves?" he asked and I raised an eyebrow at him.

"Haiden, you rule the dance floor. In this building, that's yours, your territory. And might I say she's very fond of your territory, so rule over it," he mumbled before patting my back gently.

Although confused to what he just said, my attention was back on the blonde when I noticed one of the choreographers moving closer to her.

My jaw clenches as I realize who it was. That one choreographer who's known to be a playboy. I know those moves, those stares he's giving with Lisa.

My jaw clenched at the sight of them.

"Nope," I thought to myself. "Not in my watch," Hesitation thrown, I march my way towards the two, not minding the confused expression arising every pair of orbits following my movements.

Lisa, she's mine.

---

# Chapter 50

**Lisa's POV**

"What are you doing?" I hissed at him the moment the door closed, my other hand started massaging my wrist after he pulled me out of the practice room and brought me to a different room which I think is a studio.

A long sigh escaped his lips, his eyes boring into mine and for once, I almost forgot how this would be the first time we would be alone.

My eyes can't help it. I started to admire his beautiful features, those heart-shaped lips and pointed nose, those beautiful eyes that perfectly shows the changes in his emotions.

He's beautiful...

The way his forehead creases and his lips quiver gives me thousands of jittery feelings inside that I can't seem to control.

How he was able to do that to me, I don't know.

"Did I hurt you?" I was caught off-guard at the sound of his voice, his tone full of worry and the next thing I knew was his hands onto mine as he gently massages my wrist which is a little red than usual.

"Oh God, sorry Lisa. I'm so stupid," he started rambling and my eyes got mesmerized at his reaction.

He looks so adorable I don't even understand how someone so charismatic like him on stage looks so soft like this right now.

He was pouting and that ended everything. Before I knew it, soft giggles escape my lips as I watch his adorable look.

His mouth went wide open which made me laugh even louder.

"Hey... Lisa..." he whispered and my eyes started watering a little.

"Sorry," I tried talking to him but I can't seem to stop myself from laughing. "You just look so adorable,"

"Huh?"

He looked at me confused, I was still laughing until I realized how his face became so serious, until a smirk started forming on the corner of his lips.

"So I am adorable to you huh?" he smirked and that's more than enough to make me stop from laughing.

"Shit. Did I actually say that out loud?"

He looked at me amused. "Yeah, you did?" his left eyebrow raised before he started shaking his head.

I mentally groan. I just that out loud too.

"Samantha wouldn't want to hear you cursing, hunn," he mumbled and my eyes widens, so were his.

It must have been a slip of the tongue but nevertheless, he still called me the same way he does when we were still chatting.

"I mean, ahhmmm," he started rambling once again and I felt my cheeks going red by the minute.

What's even weird is how we both realized that we're actually holding each other's hands.

"Ohhh" I mumbled before pulling my hand from his grasp.

He cleared his throat and I saw how he rubbed his hands in nervousness.

Why is he getting nervous?

"Ahmmm, yeah, this is my studio by the way, Haiden World," he proudly stated and that's when I started scanning the place.

There are toys around and a few photographs.

And then in one corner, I saw his computer and probably some equipment he used when making music.

I was busy checking his room I wasn't sure I heard what he said correctly.

"What did you said?" I asked and I saw how his cheeks blushed before he started shaking his head.

"Nothing,"

I shrugged my shoulders and didn't press further but I swear I heard him whisper, "My world..." but that would be weird.

I guess I was just hearing things.

Days passed and our relationship changed. I mean, not drastically but at least we're fine now unlike how we were the past few days.

"No! You should open your arms wider. Your movement was too restricted," I exclaimed as I monitor the practice of the other backup dancers.

VOELEVARD is known for their perfect stages but most people don’t know how tedious the process is to make everything is smooth and perfect.

After coming here in Korea with the sole purpose of surprising my IG friend, I ended up having more friends and an entirely new job.

And I'm actually not complaining. I mean, having to work with a group of amazing people is really something. Them being famous is just a plus and I get to be closer with Samantha, Rosie and our new friend Jessie.

One thing that I miss though when I was still in Thailand is being able to converse comfortably with him.

That person who made me feel wanted, made me feel happy and important, Haiden.

I knew it's partly my fault. I assumed immediately. When he pulled my hand and lead me to an empty room, I didn't know he'd be like that.

He was right though. He had tried to tell me a lot of times but it was always me who misses the chance.

And when I finally could, I didn't tell him which end up having a mishap.

Right now, I was lucky enough to be hired as a choreographer in Healing Heart Entertainment. Their main choreographer creates such badass dance steps and I'm amaze how he was able to create moves that complements every VOELEVARD members considering their differences in skills.

All I can say is, their choreography is a sure killer. It was hard and even I get my body strained at times.

However, one member definitely stood the most. What they say is actually true. He can learn the dance steps ten times faster than the rest of the members though I can say Jason and Jake almost does the same. Even Vash emits so much power in dancing.

Yohan is a fast learner too. I must say he dance gracefully. And even though Josh and Rome finds it harder to follow the steps than the others, I admire their dedication because they make up through constant practice and I salute them for that.

"Again. Your moves are too swift. You have to bend lower, the formation won't work if you don't," I exclaimed and they all followed.

---

# Chapter 51

**Lisa's POV**

We were practicing for three hours already. The backup dancers practice a little ahead of time than VOELEVARD so when they practice with them, it'll be easier for the boys.

"That's it, okay. Take a rest and we'll be continuing in an hour" I shouted and everyone bowed in acknowledgement, one culture I like about them.

"Lisa!" I turned towards my right when I heard Rosie's voice.

My eyebrow raised when I noticed how a few of the dancers followed her every movement.

I laugh a little after realizing how oblivious the girl can get. But I'd like to see any of them try.

Even though I have only been with Rosie and Jake for just a short time, it's no secret for everyone how Jake is possessive of my friend. The man doesn't even leave his eyes on the girl which made me feel jealous at times. Not of Rosie having Jake but of the fact that I don't have someone like him who would look at me like I am the only girl worthy of his heart.

I knew Jake would make my friend happy and that's more than enough for me.

"Lisa! It's your break right? Let's go check their practice!" she started squealing as she pulls my arm towards the exit.

VOELEVARD is practicing on the next room with the main choreographer.

"Stop skipping Rosie. Are you sure we're allowed to watch? Wouldn't we be scolded?" I asked her a little hesitant for a moment.

Rosie rolled her eyes at me.

"Samantha and Jessie are there. They are their girlfriends too, so that means we can watch," she told me like that's an obvious thing.

"Samantha unnie and Jessie works here and Jessie is the daughter of the boss, of course they can watch " I reasoned and she chuckled. "I am merely an employee. I don't want to impose just because I know you guys,"

"What about me then?"

"You'll start working here one Monday! And Jake is inside! " I exclaimed and her eyes widened.

"Exactly! How come I can watch and you can't when I will start working three days from now while you are already working here? And Haiden is inside too, that's basically your gate pass," she reasoned and I pulled my hand away from her.

"What do you mean gate pass?" I asked confused.

A playful smirk escaped her lips before she grabs my hand once again.

"Shut up. Let's go see your man," she giddily replied and the next thing I knew, she was already pushing me inside their practice room. I almost wanted to go out when I saw how Haiden eyes caught mine for a moment while he was dancing, before he got back and focused on the mirror in front.

He was in the middle doing a routine along with the others on a song I never heard.

I watch in awe how gracefully he was able to execute every movement.

Seeing him perform on videos and on stage was something but seeing him in person is intimidating.

Everything about him is perfect.

"Close your mouth Lisa, you're drooling," Samantha unnie teased. I didn't even realize that we are already watching beside them.

Jessie gave me a cute smile which I returned.

In no time, the song ended and every one of the boys sprawled on the floor in exhaustion.

Jessie moved forward and gave Yohan oppa a bottle of water, Samantha giving Josh oppa and Rosie giving Jake.

Everyone's eye landed on my direction, as if waiting if I will also give someone a bottle of water.

And that's when I locked eyes with Haiden.

I gulped, my heart started beating rapidly. He was looking at me intently and I swear I felt the hair on the back of my neck standing up.

"Yah, just give him the water already. I can't take this tension anymore!" Jason starred whining and my cheeks blushed even more.

"Awww! Hyung!" Jason pouted when a towel suddenly hit his face, Haiden being the culprit.

Without thinking, I moved closer to Haiden, my hand with a bottled water, my breath hitching altogether.

His face looked shocked for a moment, his lips wide open until his hands slowly reached for the bottled water on mine. But when he did, our hands touched and I immediately pulled my hands off of him.

He coughed a little, his cheeks turning red as well.

"Thanks," he whispered and I smiled.

"We're here too,"

"Look at them acting like that,"

"Let them be,"

"Oh my gosh, they look so good together!"

"This is making me so happy!"

My hands covered my face at their words.

Thank God, one of the choreographer came back in and called them back for practice.

Once we're on the side, I noticed Haiden giving me side glances.

"Hey, are two going out already?" Samantha unnie nudged me on the shoulders.

"What? No!" I whisper shouted before I started biting my index finger.

"Tsk, yet you two are totally flirting with each other, okay Lisa," Rosie snickered which made me almost hiss in embarrassment.

Jessie just chuckled at the two and I smiled at her.

"You know what, I need to go. My break is over. See you guys later!" I told them and before I left, my eyes landed back on person that has been bothering me since I came back.

I was angry for all the mess that had happened but I know it wasn't his fault. Yet, I feel so awkward after everything that had happened.

What's even worse, I feel like I am starting to really get affected by his presence.

Jung Haiden, what are you doing to me?

---

# Chapter 52

**Lisa's POV**

"Oh God, why don't you go and scream "I'm gay for Haiden" in front instead of staring at him like you want to strip him off from his practice clothes,"

I almost covered Rosie's mouth with my wet towel after hearing her words.

"Eww, Lisa. That's like full of your manly sweat,"

Jessie chuckled at Rosie's banter while Samantha unnie pulled Rosie away from me. Coz yeah, I'm ready to smack her ass for being so noisy, a few of the trainees hearing her unfiltered words which made me blush crimson red in no time.

"Shit it, Rosie. I wasn't like, staring-staring. I was simply admiring his talent in dancing," I pouted, Jessie raising her eyebrows at me.

"Babe, you were staring at him earlier while he was "sexily" drinking water from his bottle. Yeah, you weren't eye-stripping him off his clothes," she crosses her arms and I gawked at her.

"Jessie, please stay away from Rosie. She's rubbing into you," I exclaimed, scandalized about the ganging incident they are trying to pull right now.

Rosie released herself from Samantha unnie who just laughed it off and came for Jessie who immediately wrapped her arms around the other. "I can't Lisa. Yohan adores Jake, which meant Rosie is his baby too,"

Rosie stick her tongue out to tease me and I laughed.

In no time, she was already pulling me closer, hugging me real tight.

"Wow, hyung. Your girlfriends are getting it," Jason snickered as they watch us getting all lovey-dovey.

The four of us were too busy teasing each other, we didn't even notice the boys had stopped practicing and went closer to us.

Months have already passed and I was still here. I found myself enjoying my job and though Haiden and I were still awkward at times, we're at the state where we were trying to put back our puzzles together.

It started with two messages a day, asking if I had already eaten, then three message the next.

My eyes locked with his and I saw him smile. Of course, I did the same, my heart doing a mini somersault when my eyes caught his heart-shape lips.

"Hi," he called for my name and I raised my hand in acknowledgement.

"Oh my gosh, they're at it again," Vash mumbled.

"You saw each other earlier!" Josh almost exploding with laughter.

"Look at them flirt, and all," Rome was shaking his head.

"Just date already!" Jake added and I saw him moved closer to Rosie as he try to pull the other for a hug only to be kicked by Samantha because apparently, the boys reek of a mixture of sex and sweat.

How she was able to determine that smell, I really don't know.

"Hyung, the first part on our entrance, I think it would be better if you go first instead of me," I heard Jason calling for Haiden and I watch as he listens to his younger members. The other boys listening too.

The fact that they really put a lot of effort and attention to their craft beats me.

They are just so amazing. I'm glad I get to know them personally, to be honest.

Haiden starting scratching the back of his head.

"I don't know. I think it will be more impactful if it's you. Plus, you'll get more reaction if you do it,"

Jason's face softened and the others tried to busy themselves. My lower lip tucked in between my teeth as I watch the person I admire when it comes to dancing surrender.

It wasn't just today but the other days as well. I would always notice how Haiden wouldn't want any attention, instead, he let the other member does it.

It was like, he does the work behind.

The members seemed to notice too and sometimes, I would smile whenever they would throw a few compliments towards him. It shows how much they care for each other.

"Haiden oppa," I called for his name and he automatically looked towards his direction, the spark on his eyes changing and I don't know if it was because I rarely call for his name or if it's about something else.

I felt a little conscious because I know how everybody had been staring at the both of us too.

"I think Jason is right. The arrangement suits your style of dancing more," I smiled at him sincerely and he seemed taken a back for a moment.

He bit his lower lip and I watch him think for a moment.

"You think so?" he looked at me once again and I raised my hands showing him a thumbs up.

A smile broke into his lips; no wonder their fans calls him their sunshine because he really is.

"Okay!" he cheerfully accepted and Jason exclaimed.

"Waaahhh! Here I was trying to convince you since last night and all she has to is utter what - ten words and that's it? I am so offended," Jason dramatically exclaimed as Vash pulls him for a hug in comfort. The rest of the guys laughing over his antics.

Our eyes met once again and I saw him mouthing a "thank you", my heart fluttered at his action.

My hand reached for my cheat in attempt to calm my insides but to no avail, it went even crazier.

Why?

Haiden stood beside me, his arms brushing my skin which almost made me jump after I felt the surge of electricity rushing through my veins.

This is bad.

This is so so bad.

---

# Chapter 53

**Haiden's POV**

"I can't handle this anymore. When are you going to do something about it?" Rome nudged me on the shoulder and I heard Jake snickering. I glared at him and he immediately hide behind Yohan hyung who was just smiling while sitting on the corner.

Lisa and Jessie were talking with each other a few meters away from us.

"Haiden hyung, nothing will happen if you're just going to keep on checking her out from afar. We're literally having a hard time because of you two," Jason chuckled and I rolled my eyes at him.

"Jason, talk to me when you have a girl in your life. I'm barely hanging here. You think I'm not having a hard time?" I pouted, the rest of the boys started laughing at my words.

Wow. What supportive fam you guys are.

My eyes landed back on Lisa's.

How is she looking so beautiful like that is beyond me? She'd pass as a living doll to be honest.

"At least close your mouth when you're ogling with your girl. Ge'ez, be careful when there are other people," Josh hyung smirked and I didn't even spare him a glance.

"How about we make a bet? Beat Vash on a game and we'll do something for you," Jason smiled cheekily.

"Why me?" Vash started whining but everybody just chuckled.

"You'll do anything I say?" I looked at them suspiciously.

"Yeah, but if you lose, you'll have to ask Lisa out on a date," Josh hyung added and my eyes widened in instant.

"Yah, are you crazy?!" I exclaimed. I lowered down my voice when I saw Lisa and Jessie looking in our direction. "I won't. That's suicide. Plus, the two of us are barely recovering from what happened," I whispered and they scoffed.

"Which isn't entirely your fault but hers too. You gave enough clues. Though it would have been easier if you told her the first time," Yohan hyung stated and I heard agreement from the others.

"Whatever, I'm still not doing it," I told them

"Well, too bad. Rosie told me Lisa actually likes you the most even before you two started messaging each other. Apparently, Lisa loves how you groove, though I think she might want

to think about it again seeing how weak your grooves have becoming," Jake snickered and I threw my towel towards his direction, the rest of the boys laughing.

"Seriously, hyung, you need to make a move. I heard that a few of our backup dancers have a crush on her, Vash stated and I groaned internally, my eyes closed for a moment as I let his words sink in.

Of course that wasn't far-fetched. It was possible. Lisa is almost a living doll, with her beauty, kind personality not to mention her great dancing.

"Haiden hyung..." I heard Jason calling for my name but I didn't open my eyes.

I was too lost and out of focused.

"Yah, hyung!" this time, it was Vash but I still left my eyes closed.

"Is this a bad time? I'll just come back later then," I was startled when I heard Lisa's voice, my eyes suddenly opening.

"Oh, hyung!" Jake was trying to stop himself from laughing out loud when he saw the confused expression on my face.

Wait, what's happening?

"Haiden, looks like Lisa has something to tell you," Josh hyung smirked and my cheeks blushed.

What is it? Did I do something wrong again?

My eyes landed on her and realized that her cheeks were blushing and is almost squirming while she stood up.

"Yes Lisa, do you need anything?" I asked in worry.

She coughed a little, her eyes traveling back to Jessie who just gave her a fighting stance as a response, my brows furrowing at her action.

"Oppa, ahm," she stopped midway and I felt the tension building up on me.

"Yes?"

"Do you want to go out with me?" she asked and I almost choked on my saliva. My ears suddenly felt like it was clogged and I'm not sure if I heard her correctly.

Her face blushed even more and I loved how she tried covering her face but i can still see how red she looks.

Yet she still looks fucking amazing.

The guys went on cheering mode and even Jessie was now sitting on Yohan's lap.

"Yah, Haiden, answer her," Rome called for my attention and that broke me off my trance.

She was there, looking at me in worry while she waits for my answer.

Goddamn it, why did she have to ask first?

I looked at her straight in the eyes and answered.

"No." and my heart almost broke at her reaction. My eyes saw how she covered her face once again.

"Coz I should be the one asking you that question," she looked at me confused. "Lisa, do you want to go out with me?" I asked and she her mouth was hanging wide open.

"Fucking finally," Yohan hyung scoffed and Jessie hit his shoulder.

"I would love to," Lisa answered and once again, everyone cheered.

Stupid Haiden. It wasn't that hard, was it?

---

# Chapter 54

**Lisa's POV**

"Hi..." I shyly greeted Haiden oppa. My heart did a mini somersault when I saw how his cheeks redden.

Damn it. Why do you have to look so dashing yet adorable at the same time?

"Two minutes! If you two don't go out that fucking room in two minutes, I swear I'm going to break open this goddamn door, Jeon Jake! I don't even care if I see you two eating each other's asses. Get out of here! We'll be late for the awards goddamn it!"

Both of us cringe at the sound of Jason's screeching. The man is getting so cranky these days and not to mention, Rosie and Jake locked themselves in the room when they have an award show to attend to.

I shake my head and shrugged my shoulder, not believing how until now, Jason is still not used to the openly affectionate relationship of the two.

"So, are you sure you don't want to attend the award show? I mean, you can disguise as one of our stylist. Heck, you can walk on the red carpet and no one will stop you," he stated but his face turned redder.

Oh gosh, how can I handle him at this point?

The other day, I had a bet with the girls about who can last a day without talking. It was stupid, I know but I'm glad I lost.

I didn't know they'll dare me to ask Haiden put but I'm ecstatic that I did because we promised to go out one of these days.

"I'm fine oppa. The girls and I will have a night out," I whispered. I was seated beside him and every time our skin brushes with each other, I felt like there was a surge of electricity running around my whole body, it's nerve-wracking.

"Wow, finally," the sound of Jason growling took our attention.

Rosie and Jake finally realized that they can't be pissing Jason off. He might actually rip the door open in all honesty.

My eyes scanned the room. Jessie was fixing Yohan oppa's hair from the corner while Samantha unnie and Josh oppa were hugging each right in front of the door leading to the kitchen.

Just then, Rome oppa came in, his brows furrowed upon looking at us until he started laughing.

"What's with this atmosphere?" he stated and I watch as Rosie started walking towards our direction, sitting beside Haiden along the process.

I didn't know why but I felt Haiden oppa holding his breath.

Again, whenever Rosie was around, he'd be a little awkward. Rosie said it might be because of what happened and knowing Haiden, he's probably thinking it was all his fault.

I was startled when Rosie suddenly turned her back and hit Haiden oppa real hard, my mouth hanging wide open.

Jake looked startled and so are the others.

"I hit you. We're even. Now, can you please stop sulking over something from the past? It's seriously pissing me off now, oppa," Rosie screeched while pouting.

Haiden oppa's mouth was hanging wide open as he gawks at me in disbelief.

My blood started to boil. The shock look showing on Haiden's face got me all fired up.

I didn't know why but I felt like I'm getting angry. Why does she have to do that to Haiden?

Unable to contain myself, I growl at my friend in anger.

"Hey! Don't hit my Haiden. I never lay a finger on your boyfriend even though he's annoying as hell."

I didn't care how everyone's eyes were on eyes and how Rosie was startled. All that mattered at this time for me was Haiden.

He was there for me when I was at my worse.

These days, I realized how little he takes credit for what he gives when he technically gives his everything.

I stood up from my seat and grab Haiden's hand and pulled him away from everyone.

He cared for me, now it's time I show him how I much I care about him too.

I pulled him inside an empty practice room, and turned his body facing mine.

He looked at me confused and even with that expression, he never failed to make my heart skip a beat.

I've decided. I won't let anyone put his spirits down. No one messes with Jung Haiden now that I'm here.

I looked at him straight in the eye, my heart hammering inside my chest.

I closed my eyes as I take a deep breath.

"I like you, oppa. Do you like me too?" I asked him and I bite my lower lip as I wait for his response.

He does, right? Because if he doesn't, I'd die from embarrassment.

I stare at him in silence, his eyes avoiding mine.

Did he not feel the same?

My chest tightened a little.

Lisa, what have you done?

---

# Chapter 55

**Lisa's POV**

"Why do you look dejected? Someone died?" Samantha unnie joked and I let out a sigh.

"My heart did, someone kill me now" I muttered stretching my arms before resting my cheeks on the table.

"Stupid, Lisa!" I whisper-cried while hitting the top of my head.

"She really did lose it," Rosie chuckled and I pouted even more.

The boys went to the awards leaving us four behind. I grimace at the memory of what happened earlier.

Lisa just confessed to Jung Haiden of VOELEVARD. Where did I got the courage to do that?

I basically just asked him to date me.

To make matters worse, someone came in right before he can answer. But the image of his shocked expression tells me I wouldn't like his response. I mean, why would he like me?

"That's not something we're not aware of, Lili," Rosie teased and I gave her the finger and Rosie just smirked before grabbing her phone. She was dialing Jake coz the awards just ended.

"You really are adorable," Jessie mumbled and I started whining like a baby.

"Where's, "Don't hurt "my Haiden" Lisa 2.0? Tsk, I never thought you're the hero girlfriend type, " Samantha unnie laughed finger-quoting what I said earlier.

"Remind me again why I am friends with you three?"

"Hey, I support Haidenlice, okay?" Jessie smiled and I rolled my eyes.

"You were teasing me last time!" I scoffed and she laughed.

"Who was staring at the goddamn ass Lisa? It's not my fault you can't control your thirst babe,"

I groan internally once I heard them cheering.

"Yo Lisa, go get that booty," Rosie screamed and I sat properly, laughing over their antics.

We were at Jessie's unit which just right opposite of the boys.

"Let's just go celebrate ahead of the boys. Let's celebrate for them and their fans. They work hard for it," Samantha unnie came back with some drinks and I didn't even realize she went out coz Jessie and Rosie was busy pestering me.

"To Lisa's hormones!" Jessie proposed as toast and I almost choke at what she said.

"And to our Haiden that she gets laid soon!"

"Fuck off Ro. And please tone it down when you and Kook's doing it. I swear you sounded like he's banging your ears or something," I said in disgust and she just stuck her tongue out on me.

"At least we do it in private, unlike someone out there who's making out on an unlocked room,"

"That was one time, and I was drunk, okay?" Samantha unnie popped a popcorn on her mouth.

"Be thankful it was Vash who entered the room and not Jake. Imagine his shock if he sees his older sister banging someone," Jessie added.

"You're not one to talk Jessie. We all know Yohan added a double lock and made his studio soundproof because you guys bang each other almost every day. No wonder the guy always lack sleep," Samantha pointed her fingers at Jessie. "And tell him to stop asking me where you are if he can't reach you. Ge'ez, why am I best friend with him?"

I covered my mouth when I saw Jessie's cheeks turned red.

"You, sneaky brat," I exclaimed before throwing her some popcorn.

Yeah, we even do popcorns when we go for drinks, don't judge.

"Tsk, as if you're not dreaming on doing it with Haiden," she scoffed and it's my turn to turn beet red.

"Yes Lis, where did you and Haiden went earlier? Did you two had some five-minute sex or something?"

"Oh gosh, this conversation sounded dirty, I can't," Rosie screeched before grabbing her phone once again. "Huh? He answered?" she whispered before hushing us for a moment. She put the phone on her ears and her eyes widened at what Jake had probably said.

"What?" I whispered and watched as she put down her phone and put it in speaker.

Why do I feel so nervous?

"Wahhh, I didn't know you guys talk about your sex life too," I almost choke when I heard Jake's teasing tone.

They heard? They fucking heard?!!

"Holy shit," Samantha mumbled which earned a disapproval from Josh oppa.

"I heard you Samantha,"

"It isn't a sight I should have seen Samantha. I still get nightmares you know-ahhhh, Josh hyung!" we heard Vash hissing.

"Don't talk to my girlfriend like that, you brat," Josh oppa stated and Samantha unnie's smile widened.

"Jessie, baby, I'll see you in my studio later, okay?"

We watch as Jessie bit her lower lip before answering, her cheeks even redder. "Ne, oppa,"

"Eww, I hate every one of you," Jason stated and the boys laugh at his probably disgusted state. "Vash-ah, let's go find ourselves other friends. These people are making me puke,"

"Haiden, what do you have to say?" Rome oppa stated and we heard some noise from the background. Where they inside their car?

"Yah!"

"Man it up,"

"Aist,"

Oh God, he heard everything.

I covered my face in embarrassment as everyone laughed at my state.

"Kill me now!" I whisper shouted and Rosie just dodged when I attempted to grab her phone so I can turn it off.

"Okay," I heard Haiden oppa.

"No, Haiden oppa, don't mind them. I'm sorry for putting you in this situation," I grimaced, the loud beating of my heart is strong enough for me to almost lose my consciousness.

Good gracious.

"Is that so?" he asked and I had never wanted to kill myself until now. My eyes caught the girls laughing over my state.

These bitches. You're all dead after this.

"Too bad, I was going to ask you to wait on my room. I guess that's a no then?"

"No! I mean yes, I'll wait, oh, oh shit," my eyes widened when the girls started laughing real loud and the sound of the boys cheering from the other line could be heard. I covered my mouth, my eyes moistening a little, overwhelmed by all the emotions I am feeling right now.

"Oh God..." I whispered, "End that call please," I mouthed to Rosie but before she can even say a word, I almost passed out at what Haiden said next.

"We have to go. We'll be back in a hour. Ahm, my room is the third door on the right. See you soon. Bye,"

With that, the call ended and so is my life.

Did he just ask me to wait on his room? Like, after he heard us girls talking about sex?

"Shit Lisa, freshen up and find your sexiest under garments. You're finally going to have a wild night," Rosie and everyone cheered but I didn't care.

"Make us proud Lis,"

Fuck, I don't even mind not putting any underwear on.

---

# Chapter 56

**Haiden's POV**

"Sorry but I need a drink first. you can't expect me guys to just barge inside looking all sober like this," I almost scream in panic as the boys tried to pull me inside the unit, the sound of the music blasting inside ringing in my ears.

Did they leave the music on?

"What nonsense? You need to do this, plus, this is the woman you're obviously head over heels with, or at least talk with each other. Confess, settle things out or something," Rome said as he tries to push me once again.

The seven of us just arrived at the unit we were staying and we can't come in. Or I can't come in.

I didn't know what made me but the moment I said those words, there's no turning back.

When Jake answered Rosie's call, we were about to go home. Imagine our shock when we realized that Rosie didn't noticed that Jake had already answered. And Jake, being a good younger member, decided to share what he was listening to putting the call in speaker.

"You were teasing me last time!" my heart fluttered at the sound of her voice. The image of her confessing to me earlier came into mind.

She was so beautiful and hearing those words coming out of her lips was heaven, I wasn't even able to respond. And just when I was about to, one of our managers came in and took me since we will be late for the awards show.

I wish I was able to respond. Her cheeks were blushing and I felt bad for leaving her hanging.

"Who was staring at the goddamn ass Lisa? It's not my fault you can't control your thirst babe,"

I almost choke when I heard what Jessie said. Lisa was staring at my butt?

"Yo Lisa, go get that booty," Rosie screamed and Jake was laughing over his girlfriend's words.

"Let's just go celebrate ahead of the boys. Let's celebrate for them and their fans. They work hard for it," It was Samantha and we all smiled as we remember the awards were bringing home. Our fans are really amazing.

"To Lisa's hormones!"

"And to our Haiden that she gets laid soon!"

"Fuck off ro. And please tone it down when you and Kook's doing it. I swear you sounded like he's banging your ears or something," I heard Lisa complaining and Jake just shrugged his shoulders.

"Dude, I agree with her" Jason scoffed.

"At least we do it in private, unlike someone out there who's making out on an unlocked room,"

"That was one time, and I was drunk, okay?"

I heard Josh hyung groaning at what Samantha had said.

"Be thankful it was Vash who entered the room and not Jake. Imagine his shock if he sees his older sister banging someone," Jessie added.

"I am not thankful for that!" Vash hissed and Josh just hit him on the shoulder.

"You're not one to talk Jessie. We all know Yohan added a double lock and made his studio soundproof because you guys bang each other almost every day. No wonder the guy always lack sleep," Samantha whined. "And tell him to stop asking me where you are if he can't reach you. Ge'ez, why am I best friend with him?"

"You, sneaky brat," Lisa exclaimed.

"Tsk, as if you're not dreaming on doing it with Haiden," Jessie bantered back and the boys were pushing me in tease.

"Yes Lis, where did you and Haiden went earlier? Did you two had some five-minute sex or something?"

"Right, did you?" Josh hyung asked and I just waved my hands at them.

And just when Rosie realized that we heard everything, I ended up being in a whole lot of mess.

I just asked Lisa to wait for me in my room, after I heard them talking about sex.

And now, here I am, chickening out.

Not that I don't want to do it with her, I swear to God I do. I fucking do. But even just her smile makes my knees go weak. How am I supposed to stay with her in my room like this?

Before I can even mutter another protest, the door sprung open and a drunk Jessie came into view.

"Woah!" Yohan hyung muttered as Jessie pulled him for a kiss.

"Holy shit!" Rome exclaimed ad our jaw dropped on the floor at the sight of our dorm.

Pillows are scattered everywhere, bottles of liquor on the table, some chips on the floor, a giggling Rosie and Samantha were hugging each other on the bean bag while Lisa was at the top of the table dancing.

They were dead drunk.

"Oh God, how much did they drink?" Jake asked in awe.

My eyes bulged at the sight of Lisa. And I almost stopped breathing when I realized that she was wearing my shirt.

The moment she caught eyes of me, she started jumping dangerously which made my heart almost leap out of my chest.

In a flash, I run towards her and guide her down.

"Oppa!!!!" she giggled as she cupped my cheeks, my arms wrapped around her waist. Beads of sweat started forming on my forehead at the sight of her.

"Li-Lisa..." I whispered.

A huge yet seductive smile spread across her face and I swear I can faint any moment.

As if her actions weren't enough, she had to drop another bomb on my face.

"You look hot oppa," she stated before grabbing my hands as she pull me towards my room.

Once we're inside, the blood on my face drained at what she said next.

She leaned closer until our face are so close with each other, "By the way," I watch as she started playing with the hem the shirt she is wearing, "I'm not wearing any bra..."

She smiled at me then turn her back and I watch as she sexily walks towards my bed.

"Fuck," I whispered.

And then she turned around, she raised her hand as she urges for me to follow.

Fuck.

---

# Chapter 57

**Lisa's POV**

"Shit," I whispered, my body frozen in place as I dare not to move. I felt something heavy resting on my waist.

Shit. Shit. Shit.

"Lisa, you really are stupid," I scolded myself. The memory of what happened last night repeating before me.

I remember getting drunk and all but my memory isn't clear uo to when we all started dancing and singing on their dorm.

Jessie thought it will be better for us to stay in their dorm so we transferred but ended up getting even more wasted.

I groan internally at the sight of Haiden. He was sleeping peacefully beside me, a small smile emerging on his face.

Silently, I tried assessing myself. Aside from my headache, I don't feel anything unusual right now. And I'm still wearing a shirt - his shirt.

How did I end up here? Did I go here? I mean, he told me to wait on his room but no matter how much I try, I don't really have a memory of it.

Did I drink too much?

My eyes scanned the look on his face. He was smiling as if something good had happened to him.

*Badump.*

*Badump.*

The loud beating of my heart is ringing in my ears.

My right hand reached for his face and slowly, I trace every angle, each detail I try to imprint in my mind.

*Beautiful...*

Jung Haiden, what are you doing to me?

"Aist," Slowly, I removed his hand from my waist. It'll be weird he wakes up with me beside him.

But just right after I lifted his hand, he started moving and my breath hitch when he suddenly moved and pulled me closer, my face now almost buried on his chest.

I gulped.

He's not wearing any shirt.

"Hmmmm..." the hairs at the back of my neck stop up at the sound of him moaning.

Good Lord. How am I supposed to leave?

"Good morning," I heard him whisper and my eyes widened when I saw him open his eyes and locking with mine.

I started coughing when he suddenly smiled.

"Is your head okay? You were so drunk last night, do you want to get up and grab some hangover soup?" he stated before pulling me even closer, his other hand brushing the hair covering my face.

"Huh?" I asked confused.

Soft chuckles escaped his lips. He seemed to be enjoying the confusion I'm currently into.

"You're so adorable hunn," he whispered and my body stiffened as he moved closer, my eyes automatically closes, my hands balling into a fist.

Oh my God...

Is he going to kiss me?

I waited but the kiss that I was expecting never came. Instead, I felt something soft touching my nose so I opened my eyes and I almost shrieked when I realized that he was bumping nose with mine.

"Your cheeks are red, hunn. Are you getting shy about what you did last night?" he started teasing and I grimaced.

"I really did something huh? Lisa, stupid," I whispered and his laughter echoed inside the room.

He looked at me amused. "You don't remember?"

The moment I nodded, he suddenly overturned our bodies, trapping my legs between his as his hands pinned mine above my head, a loud yelp coming out of my mouth.

"What are you doing?" beads of sweat started to form on my forehead, nervousness seeping through my body.

"You don't remember doing this to me last night?" he smirked and my eyes almost popped out of my socket.

"I did?" I asked exasperated and I grimaced when he nodded.

"And this," my stomach churned the moment I felt his lips lightly touching a sensitive part of my skin just right below my ear.

My eyes automatically closing when I felt him leave trails of kisses even marking me a little.

"Oh shit," Before I even knew it, a moan escaped my lips, my core tightening at the emotion he was suddenly making me feel.

"You were so naughty last night," he murmured in between kisses and I squirmed underneath him.

"O - oppa..." I stuttered and I felt him sucking my skin a little, my body arching unable to handle the tension building up on my body.

"You.... I was trying to hold back because your drunk but it was so hard. But it's even harder because of what you did next,"

He stopped kissing my neck and pulled away a little.

Did I do something more shocking than this?

"You fell asleep while on top of me Lisa," he smirked and I felt his hand loosening its grip over mine. And when he did, my hands automatically covered my face.

It was so embarrassing.

"But you were still adorable baby," he cooed and I felt him lay down beside me pulling me back to his chest.

"I'm so sorry, I was so drunk..." I apologize before trying to stand up but he just pulled me back.

"Where do you think you are going? We still need to cuddle," he stated and I felt him getting my other hand as he put it on his waist, my mouth hanging wide open at his gesture.

"Let's date Lisa," his eyes were locked into mine and I suddenly felt like I was floating on a cloud nine.

"What did you just say?" maybe I heard it wrong,"

"I said let's date, officially. Be my girlfriend, be mine," he stated, his voice soft and I felt like he said it lovingly.

It sounded surreal. But Haiden is literally an angel, him sounding like one isn't impossible.

Did he just ask me to be his girlfriend?

"Why?" I covered my mouth when I realized that my thought just slipped out of my mind. But then he just smiled.

"Because I like you and because I like you to be mine only - your attention, your love, your smile. I like them all to just be mine. Can't I do that?"

My heart melted at his words.

"I want to be able to kiss you, hug you and call you my girlfriend in front of everyone. I want them to know you're off limits and the closest that they can get is to admire you from afar. I can do those right?"

A chuckle escaped my lips at what he said.

"What do you mean? Nobody pays attention to me anyways,"

His eyes widened at my words. It was if he was about to say a lot of things but decided otherwise.

And I almost laugh when I saw him pouted. So I did what I was dying to do ever since.

I moved forward and gave him a quick peck on the lips. His lips parted in shock and I wish I had a camera with me so I can get his reaction.

"Okay," I answered.

"Okay what?" he asked confused.

"I will be your girlfriend. I will be yours and Jung Haiden will be mine. Is that good enough?"

A huge smile stretched on his face and I giggle when he started doing waves with his body even though he's hugging me.

He was so happy and so am I.

I have been dying to be his girlfriend, and now that I am, I don't have anything to ask for.

---

# Chapter 58

**Haiden's POV**

"Yah, stop grinning like that, you idiot," I smack Jason's shoulder as I see him staring at my girlfriend rather, too intently - Lisa, dancing in the middle, oblivious about the fact that almost every eye of the trainees and back up dancers are following her every move.

Jason hissed and looked at me incredulously.

"Really? You're going to be like that? What are you going to do if she ended up being an idol, huh?" he exclaimed as he massages the part that I hit, Josh hyung laughing over Jason's words.

We were on the side and resting as Lisa continuously watch over the dancers and teach the choreography for our next performance.

She was wearing a pair of black shorts and my loose black shirt which I didn't know is that beautiful or was it because she was the one wearing it?

"Well, that can't be helped. I mean, whoever sees her right now will think that she is," I mumbled, my chest suddenly tightening.

I wasn't the jealous type nor am I a boyfriend who'll get mad if I see her wearing something revealing. But then, seeing them look at her like that feels like something inside me is flickering, like a fire burning deep inside.

Am I afraid to lose her?

Probably.

Scratch that - I am.

Even to our fans, I always feel like I was the least on their favorite. I mean, I wasn't offended but sometimes, it hurts me too especially when I am on a v-live celebrating something but they end up telling me things like stopping the things that I usually do.

Someone told me to stop making sound effects once and I said okay because I thought it annoys them. But then it's not something I can easily stop.

There are times that they look for the other boys too.

I am just so glad there are some who makes me feel that I am loved.

But Lisa, I don't think I will be okay losing her.

My heart skipped a beat when I heard her laughter, the joyous sound filling my ears making my insides melt in happiness.

"You like her that much?" I was startled when I heard Yohan hyung's voice, his arms crossed over his chest and my eyes followed his line of sight - Jessie.

The dancers were on a break and as usual, the girls were chatting.

Lately, the girls tend to stay with each other rather than us, their boyfriends and it's fine as long I have her attention afterwards - our me time.

It hasn't been a month and only the boys and her friends know. I haven't told about her to our managers but I will. It's not that we're hiding our relationship anyways. Dating bans have been lifted off our contracts a few years ago and in all honestly, it's not like we have dating bans at all. We never dated that much, busy schedules and complicated life.

I bite my lower lip when I heard her beautiful laughter once again. If this continues, my heart would go weak any moment.

"Yeah, you like her that much," I was caught off-guard at what Yohan hyung muttered. i totally forgot that he was asking me a question.

"Is it that obvious?" I scratch the back of my head as I continuously stared at her. It was as if I don't want her to leave my sight.

"Well yeah, I mean, everything about you is transparent and you look at her like she's some precious gem and all. If you keep on doing that, I'm going to get into trouble with Jessie," he chuckled and I pouted.

"I wasn't overdoing it," I whined and he just raised his eyebrow.

"You weren't but it was so obvious how you always look so worried whenever she's not beside you. You even get jealous at your members admiring her dancing. But the saddest thing is, you don't show her," he looked at me amused and I grimaced.

My eyes focused back on her and realized that she was already looking at our direction, her smile directed at me.

In all honesty, I'm still struggling is showing my affection towards her. Deep inside, I'm still scared that she'll change her mind and I'll lose her.

My fears, they are restricting me. And I feel like I'm starting to hit rock-bottom. I want to show her how I feel but whenever I try to, something inside me is pulling me back. I'm not sure if it was because I have been used to being that.

Lately, the boys tell me not to keep my pains to myself and they openly tell those on interview. I'm afraid the fans would worry actually but I knew they were saying those things because they mean it.

"Isn't it enough that I she knows what I feel about her?" I asked and Yohan hyung looked at me worriedly.

He turned his body until he was facing me, his eyes catching the boys which I knew were silently listening on the side.

"You shouldn't be restricting yourself like that Haiden. Tell her how you fell. Show her. She may be patient with you but you got to do it one way or another," he told me and I was startled when I felt a pair of arms snaked around my waist, an all too familiar scent filling in my ears.

"Babe..." her voice rasp maybe due to the dryness of her throat, I had to remind myself it wasn't good even though it sounded too sexy to my ears.

"Lisa..." my cheeks blushed when I realized how her face is now buried on my chest, the boys teasing us along the process.

My eyes scanned the room and realized how the trainees and backup dancers are looking at us in shock.

My body stiffened a little, surprised by her sudden action.

"Those dancers kept on asking for my number and wouldn't believe I'm taken so I thought about showing them who owns me," she pouted lifting her face so our eyes would lock with each other.

"What?" I exclaimed, what she just said slowly sinking in. Before I knew it, my arms automatically wrapping around her body securely pulling her even closer, but not before I saw a smirk showing on her face.

"I'd like to see them try," my voice getting stern in a minute. The next thing I knew was me kissing the top of his head and her scooting in a little more.

The expression on my face automatically changing.

Lisa, she's mine.

My eyes scanned the room and made sure everybody sees.

Nobody touches my girl.

---

# Chapter 59

**Lisa's POV**

"Have you seen Haiden?"

Jason raised his head as he stretches his legs while on the floor. He was warming up perhaps to practice.

They were supposed to rest but Jason wanted to do some stretching and all.

"Ahm, not sure? He may be on the other practice room," he mumbled before focusing his attention back to what he was doing.

"He isn't there," I told him and he raised his eyebrow.

"Maybe he was with the others,"

"Okay, let me check," I told him even though I already knew the answer. I don't wanna worry Jason too.

Jake was with Rosie doing God knows while Jessie and Yohan was there on the studio writing songs together.

Samantha unnie went out on a date with Josh oppa and Vash was eating on the cafeteria.

Rome is busy writing on his studio and Haiden is nowhere to be found.

It was last night when we last talk and he was sounding very irritated about something.

It's been months since we started being on a relationship and all I can say is that Haiden was a total sweetheart.

It's not like that at first but when he started, he had been very open in showing his affection towards me even though there were some other members around or even the trainees or dancers.

They were on a vacation after their comeback has just ended and recently, I started to notice how he was acting differently. Not me because he's the same whenever we are together but I can't exactly point out what it is.

He had been camping on his studio for weeks but he wasn't there today.

Two days ago, I realized that he was getting frustrated because the melodies he's working on doesn't seem to work more satisfy him and it's starting to annoy him.

I would have told him that it's okay but I don't want to stress him further.

Now, it has been three hours since I was trying to contact him but I realized that he left his phone in the studio.

I was walking in the hallway when I saw their producer, Donnie.

"Oppa! Did you see Haiden?" I asked and he look at me confused.

"He went out earlier saying about finding to you. He said he must have snapped at you last night and can't really focus so he went home," he answered and my mouth went wide open.

Was he on my room?

I was camping at their dorm and didn't even bother going over mine before coming in here.

After thanking him, I went straight to Jessie's unit.

A smile escaped on my lips.

He didn't exactly snap at me over the phone. He just sounded a little annoyed which I can understand since he hasn't been sleeping a lot lately.

"My baby..." I whispered to myself as I slowly opened the door of my room, his form automatically greeting me as he lay on my bed, eyes closed, sleeping soundly like a beautiful creature that he is.

Slowly, I moved forward as I stare at his beautiful face.

Sometimes, I wonder how I got so lucky for having him.

He is so selfless. Never once did I see him doing things for his own but for his brothers first. He was never greedy.

He was just that: the sunshine everybody knows.

But even I know that there are things hidden behind those smiles.

Every pain, every insecurity, every sorrow he felt were all buried behind those smile.

Carefully, I sat on my bed and pull the blanket to cover him.

He must have been so exhausted that he fell asleep while waiting for me.

My hand reached for the locks of his hair as I slowly brush them.

"I love you..." I whispered.

Jung Haiden the way I see it, he was slowly sinking, the heavy feeling he was trying to hide, all the burdens he was trying to carry on his own, he was slowly drowning and I can't allow that.

I leaned a little and gave him a soft kiss on his forehead.

Just doing that makes my heart flutter.

"You've pulled me out from the rock-bottom, now it's time I pull you back, baby. Let me save you this time," I whispered to myself.

With that in thought, I slowly moved and lay beside him my arms automatically reaching for his body, pulling closer.

He must have felt my presence as he opened his eyes a little, a smile automatically showing when he saw me.

In instinct, he moved closer and wrapped his arms around me instead, even kissing me quickly on the lips.

"I'm sorry, Lisa," he whispered and I knew he wanted to say a lot more things.

I know, baby.

I watch as his eyes slowly drift him back to his slumber and I can't help but admire his features.

"Jung Haiden, I love you..." I told him and I closed my eyes the same way he did.

I love you so much, my sunshine.

---

# Chapter 60

**Haiden's POV**

"Lisa?" I called for my girlfriend's name, my hand feeling the empty space beside me.

She didn't come home? I thought to myself.

I bite my lower lip. Slowly, I started getting off of her bed, my hand reached for my hair as I try to fix it from being all over the place.

Was I too mean to her? Was she upset?

I can't help but think a lot of things.

Lately, I've been so busy and all the stress is starting to eat my system.

Normally, I don't really share the boys my problems and I wouldn't with Lisa but sometimes I find myself being grumpy and she takes it all.

I feel so bad about it especially since she doesn't utter a word.

I wouldn't be surprise if she suddenly breaks up with me because I have been treating her like shit and all.

As I open the door on her room, I was greeted by her lovely face. Her hair was tied in a messy bun, her body hugging a loose shirt that I was sure was missing on my closet. Or did I leave it here?

Her face brightened at the sight of me and I bowed a little when I saw Jessie talking with her. They were sitting on the couch.

"Babe," she greeted before walking straight to me, her arms immediately wrapping around my body and I did the same.

My cheeks blushed a little when I saw Jessie smirking.

Between the two of us, Lisa was the showy one. She was never afraid to show her affection towards me even though someone is with us. And I am thankful for that.

I don't want her to feel unloved but my insecurities are always eating my system and the courage I thought I have seemed to disappear every time.

"Did you sleep well?" she asked as she pull away a little, her beautiful face catching me off-guard as always.

"Lisa..." I called her name.

Why isn't she getting angry?

"Are you going back to the office? Do you want to go together? Or do you want to go out on a date?" she smiled and I know I'm getting attach to her even more.

"Stop being too clingy Lisa. Let Haiden breathe," Jessie chuckled and I started coughing.

Lisa pouted and I cupped her face immediately, a smile emerging on my face.

"How about we grab a breakfast on the cafe across the office?" I told her and her face immediately brightens.

My hands pinch her cheeks and she grins.

"I'll pick you in twenty," I told her and she jumped over me for a quick peck on the lips. My eyes widened as she caught me off-guard Jessie's laughter echoing across the room.

"I, ahm, I'll go," I stuttered and Lisa giggled. She always does whenever she realized how I am getting flustered.

As I open the door, I heard her teasing which earned another set of laughter from Jessie.

"I'll wear something sexy," she shouted and I grunted internally before going out of their unit.

I shook my head in amusement as I stare blankly on the door of the unit next door which is ours.

I wonder if the boys are inside.

As I push the doorknob open, I was greeted by a very gloomy atmosphere.

The boys were all gathered in the living room, Samantha was sitting beside Josh and Rosie does the same with Jake.

Rome was pacing back and forth in the middle.

"Something wrong?" I asked and all heads turned towards my direction.

Vash's face looked pale and so was Jason's.

Yohan hyung was looking elsewhere but me while Josh hyung looks so worried.

"What's with this atmosphere?" I asked awkwardly.

Something isn't wrong and I can feel it.

"What?" I asked again and this time, even I noticed how stern my voice had been. I sat on the empty couch opposite of Vash's and I felt my stomach churning.

I have this feeling that whatever the boys are hiding concerns me.

"Hyung, you tell him," I heard Vash whispered as he pushes Josh hyung a little.

"Yah, Lisa said it's fine. And why should I do it? There's Rome,"

"Coz you're the oldest, you idiot,"

"Aww!" Josh hyung snickered after Samantha hit him on the shoulder.

"What do you mean Lisa said it's fine?" I asked again. I'm starting to get pissed off.

I hate being left in the dark. Actually, almost everybody hates it.

"Ah, you see, someone posted pictures of you and Lisa," Rome started and I can easily tell that this will head to something that will make me mad.

"And?"

Jason started coughing. "I don't think you should actually read the comments," he started and I immediately pulled the phone resting on my pocket.

Once I did, I saw a lot of notifications on my screen which I never noticed since my phone was in silent mode.

Every scroll, I felt my hands tightening it grip on the phone.

"Hyung..."

"Stop reading Haiden," I heard Rome stated and I gritted my teeth in anger.

All of these are hate comments towards Lisa. And apparently, some rumors came out that she's working for Healing Heart Entertainment and that she's using me for fame or something.

"So," my voice broke a little, which they know only happens when I am angry, "You're telling me Lisa had seen all of these?" I asked and I saw them lowering their heads.

"And she said it's fine?" I exclaimed. "They are calling her names and she's fine with it? Yah, Rome-ah, did our boss said anything?" I asked and he looked at me in worry.

"I think he and Lisa talked. He wanted to talk to you but Lisa handled it earlier because you're sleeping,"

"Aist," I sigh in frustration. "Why does she have to handle it herself? I should be the one fixing this!" I growled in anger and that's when the front door open. Lisa came in wearing a pair of pants and a black shirt tucked in on her pants. Her hair was still dripping wet and I was sure she went here in a hurry.

"You haven't changed?" She asked and I know she knew why but she's acting like nothing's happened.

"You saw all of these?" I asked her, my voice getting louder than the usual. I stood up as she walks closer, her face serious and that made me even angrier. "Why didn't you tell me?"

"You're sleeping. I took care of it and it's no big deal. Why are you shouting?" she answered calmly and I can feel everything building up inside me.

"It is a big deal to me Lisa. What do you think I would feel seeing my fans calling you names and all?"

"They are not your fans if they can't accept what will make you happy. And I don't give a fuck on whatever they call me because I only care about you. I don't want you getting stressed out over these things so I told Bang PD that everything is cool," she stated.

"What?" I lifted my gaze on the ceiling to ease my frustration. "You can't just do this Lisa. You think they will stop? They won't. And trust me, It'll only get worse,"

She looked at me exasperated.

"So what? You want the company to release a statement that we aren't dating? Or do you want to break up with me? Is that what you want?" she stepped closer and I can feel her starting to get angry too.

"Guys, calm down. Let's talk it out," I heard Rome but my eyes were focused on her.

"It's not like that Lisa. What I'm trying to say is, let me do my job as your boyfriend. You can't just decide about things like this. You shouldn't, "

"And why not? So you can get stressed over it than you already are? Tell you what, let me do my job as your girlfriend too. Because the way I see it, your other job is keeping you occupied so I thought I can take the burden off your shoulder by stepping up. They are calling me names and not you and I'm telling you I don't mind so what's your problem?"

"Whatever, you won't listen. Let's talk some other time," I told her as I walk my way towards my room.

"Go change because we're having breakfast," she stated and I turned around.

"We are not. People will see us together and that'll make things worse,"

"Don't make me repeat myself Haiden. I'll wait for you there," she said before turning her back.

"Go to your unit Lisa. I have work to do," I told her and I know she heard me.

I just wish she'd listen.

She walked out of the unit and a sigh escaped my lips.

I continue heading to my room and didn't bother looking back even though my members are calling me.

Should I do a V-live to calm them down? I don't want people attacking her because of me.

Lisa, what am I going to do with you?

---

# Chapter 61

**Haiden's POV**

"I'll do a V-live to calm them down," I told my manager and he just let out a sigh.

He moved towards the front to set it up.

"Haiden, actually I don't think that's a good idea. I mean, you're not feeling particularly well," Rome stated but I didn't answer.

Lisa went to the cafe like she said and Samantha had to fetch her along with Jessie and Rosie.

She had been sitting there for two hours and I only found out after I saw her photos in social media when a few of our fans called out that she looks like the girl with me on the previous photos that were posted online.

I tried calling her but she ignored my calls and now I'm in our office. Bang PD didn't say a word. They don't actually restrain us from being in a relationship but if things get out of hand, that's when they step in.

"Rome, I'm fine. Just, let me do this," I told him and I heard Josh hyung snickered.

"Stop acting all tough Haiden. It's okay to feel hurt. Don't do the same mistakes that I did with Samantha. You very well knew how I almost lost her, for the same reason," He stated, his arms cross as his back rested on the wall.

"Hyung, this is different. I don't want to drag her with me. She'd already had too much pain in her. I don't want to cause even more of that,"

"Tsk, you think you're not hurting her by not listening to what she wants? It's so obvious that she meant it when she said she doesn't care. Is it hard to understand that she only cares about you? That she doesn't give a single fuck about those hates? Is it hard to understand that you found a girl who is selfless enough to put up with everything despite all this?"

"Yah!" I moved closer and Rome stood up between us.

"Haiden," He warned. Being together for so many years, we've fought a lot. Josh hyung was never strict with us despite being the oldest and we never crossed the line even though he was always friendly with us.

However, I am starting to get really piss off. Not because of what he is saying but because he was actually right. And that I get his point.

"Is it wrong for me to worry for her?" I asked in defeat. My knees shaking a little unable to handle the emotions I have inside.

I had never broken down in front of my members. My emotions are always enclosed, and I know they were worried.

"It isn't. But because you always worry about people, you forgot they worry about you too. It's okay to let people worry for you Haiden. Because a lot of people care about you..." he stated. Gone was the sternness in his voice. All I hear is sincerity and I know he mean what he said.

"Haiden, you can't always be the happy pill that everybody knew. We all know it's starting to be a burden for you and I'm sure Lisa knows it that's why she's doing that. You've protected us for so long..." Rome stared at me in worry, "Let other people protect you too,"

Our manager went out after setting up my live.

"Think about it Haiden. If this continue, you might regret the consequences," Josh hyung stated before turning his back. Rome gave me a lingering look before following Josh hyung as he pulled the door shut.

A sigh escaped my lips.

My eyes landed on the phone before me. The sound of it beeping getting my attention.

"Have your breakfast,"

My stomach churn at the message before me. It's from Lisa.

I very well knew that she cools down easily. No matter how angry she is, she's always the first to put down her guard and reach out. That's one reason why we easily made up whenever we have a fight.

However, we never really fought this big before. Our arguments mostly consist of simple things, like disagreeing on opinions about movies, what food to order for takeout, and how she almost have every piece of my shirt. But the last one I don't actually mind because I love seeing her on mine.

My hands balled into a fist. Without even thinking, I started my V-live, a fake smile showing on my face, something I do rarely but I still have to do it because people knew me as Haiden, the happy pill of VOELEVARD.

Sometimes, I have to fake a smile even though I don't feel like it. I have to show I'm happy even though I'm hurting inside. And I know Lisa can feel it. If there's one thing I was sure about, it's that Lisa can see through my emotions very well.

She knows when I am not okay even when everybody thinks I am.

My eyes caught the comments continuously popping on the V-live. I spaced out I totally forgot I am already online.

"Hello," I smiled before waving to the viewers. The smile once again forming on my lips.

This time, it's genuine. Seeing the comments asking me if I'm fine and not to worry about everything makes my heart flutter. Truthfully, not all fans can accept everything about their idols and seeing comments that says they will support us whatever happens, whatever we like, makes us feel all over the moon.

"I miss you guys," I told them.

But of course, like I said, not everyone will be happy for you.

Yesterday was too bad. Because Healing Heart Entertainment did not release any statement about my dating news, a few fans were frantic about it.

"Is that girl really your girlfriend, oppa?"

"But you can't date. Jake and Josh oppa are already dating,"

"She looks like a doll, oppa. I'm happy for you!".

"I love you oppa!"

"Where are the others?"

"Can you call the other members?"

"She's not your girlfriend oppa, right? You only love us, right?"

"She's a slut oppa, stay away from her,"

The comments keep coming in and it made me silent.

The smile still showing on my face but deep inside, I can feel my anger starting to build up.

"How are you guys?" I tried to change the subject but a few of the fans keep on asking questions about Lisa.

The last one catching me off-guard.

*"I'll make sure to leave a bruise on her face if I see her,"*

That made me snap.

"Don't,"

My eyes closed for a moment, my breathing started to be irregular.

*Don't get mad Haiden.*

--

# Chapter 62 - End

**Haiden's POV**

I was trying to calm myself when the door suddenly burst open revealing a very worried Jason.

"Jason," I called and he looked at me like he wants to tell me something.

"Hyung!" he started acting being jolly but I know why he came in.

They must have seen the live and wanted to draw the attention to him.

I smile to him in gratitude.

"Hello everyone!" he greeted giving out a wink to our fans.

I stood up for a moment to calm myself so I went out of the frame, Jason's eyes following my movement.

He was talking to our fans as I drink a zip of water before getting back on the frame, a smile now showing on my face.

My chest tightened.

I don't want this. I don't want to show a fake me to the people who loves me.

And when I get back on the frame, the comments about Lisa came in again and I can feel myself about to explode.

And that's when I saw a username that is so familiar with me.

She was leaving multiple messages with the same comments. And I know she did it so I can see it in case there are a lot of comments popping

*"I'm fine... Keep calm, I love you,"*

Lisa...

My eyes closed for a moment.

Even after all of these, all she thinks about is me.

She knows I'm at my limit so she stays with me there so we can climb back together.

Lisa, she's always there for me, loving me at both my best and worse.

And I love her the same way.

A smile suddenly shows on my face.

Lisa doesn't give a fuck to what my fans would say about her because she only cares about me.

"Hyung..." Jason asked in worry.

I opened my eyes and looked at him, a smile now showing on my face.

I guess it's time I don't give a fuck to what they say too, huh?

I faced the screen and didn't mind the comments showing.

I knew not everyone of our fans hates the person we love because we knew it from Josh, Jake and Yohan hyung's situation.

There are a lot who loves us the same way with or without a girlfriend.

"Jason, I think you will have to continue my V-live," I told him and he looked at me confused.

"My girlfriend is having breakfast without me," I stated and his jaw dropped.

I chuckled at his reaction.

"Guys, sorry for not telling you sooner but yes, oppa has a girlfriend and she's the most wonderful person I ever met," I started.

I know this will be on every fucking article in five minutes but I don't care.

I need to do this. I don't want to lose myself over all my insecurities.

I can't let all of these eat my happiness away.

Like everybody else, I have every right to be happy. And I won't if I won't start within myself.

Lisa had always made me feel loved but now I know why despite that I wasn't fully happy. Coz I forgot to love myself too.

I forgot to check what will make me happy.

Soft chuckles escaped my lips as realizations hit me.

"Lisa, that's her name. She dances so well she might be better than me. She's sweet and always cares about me first before herself. She's selfless and pure. She's an angel. I know this is too much to ask but I hope you'll send your love to her the same way you guys do to me,"

I heard Jason chuckle and felt him patting my shoulder.

"I'm sorry but I'm going to have to leave you guys with Jason for now but I promise to see you guys soon. I just have to make up with Lisa for ditching her for breakfast twice. You all know how bad it is to let a girl eat alone, right?" I wave goodbye to the screen and didn't even bother checking the comments.

I gave Jason a high five and slowly, my feet draw me towards the door.

I have never felt so light like this before, like, all the bricks on my chest had been lifted.

It feels...wonderful.

*One step*

*Two steps*

I was rushing.

I need to see Lisa. She must have been worried for me.

But I was just about to pass the door for my studio when her figure suddenly emerged from the corner, the beads of sweats showing on her face made me realized that she run her way here.

I stopped from my tracks and stare at her.

She's really fucking beautiful.

In a swift, we were both in each other's arms, tears streaming down her cheeks.

"Baby, why are you crying?" I whispered, pulling away a little as I cupped her cheeks.

She was pouting.

"I'm just," she whimpered and I had to give her a kiss on her forehead to calm her down. "I'm proud of you baby. I am so so happy," she stated and that's when I know I made the right decision.

"Thank you baby for always being there for me. For making me feel so love and for patiently waiting. I know you've selflessly stayed with me at my darkest state. You've stayed even though I sometimes push you away. You waited until I can learn to love myself too," I whispered, my forehead meeting hers.

My chest was filled with so much emotion I feel so overwhelmed.

"I love you Jung Haiden," she whispered and I smiled.

"I love you too, Lisa," I told her a smile now showing on her face.

I gave her pecks of kisses on her face which made her giggle.

"Ahm, sorry to break you very intimate moment but can we pass? I need to see Samantha because it's that time of the month," we heard Josh hyung's voice and we both pulled away in shock. He smirked as he passed by us.

"Tsk, that's quite some drama you did there Haiden," Yohan hyung snickered before passing over too.

"Stop making out on the hallway, I swear to God, Healing Heart Entertainment will have to take down every fucking camera in here since you guys keep eating each other on the hallways. And this goes to all of you guys," Vash growled before turning his back, probably to head to Jason and join him on the V-live.

"You're just jealous because you don't have a girlfriend!" Lisa screamed and Vash made a finger without turning back to us, and that made Lisa and I laugh.

Soon enough, it's just us that is left on the hallway.

"So, about that breakfast," Lisa started and slowly, I moved towards her once again, a playful smirk now showing on my face.

"How about we have a different breakfast?" I lick my lower lip and I saw her gulped.

She closed her eyes for a moment as if contemplating over something, I can't help but get amused.

"Fuck it," she mumbled before pulling me by the collar, her other hand opening the door over my studio and the next thing I knew was her pushing me inside, the sound of the door getting locked is what I heard next.

"You better fuck me really bad Jung Haiden. At least you owe me that for ditching me yesterday," she growls and I so love the wild Lisa.

Actually, I love everything about her.

"My pleasure baby," I told her before pulling her for a hungry kiss.

This time, it's just you, my only rock-bottom.

--

# Chapter Epilogue

**Lisa's POV**

"You've got to be kidding me..." I turned my attention at the direction of the front door when I heard my boyfriend's voice.

"Whooop! That's some kind of ass work right there," Haiden smack the back of Jason's head at his words.

A smile came across my lips.

In no time, I was already running towards my boyfriend's direction, my arms open wide ready to have the biggest hug ever.

"Ahmp,!" soft chuckles escaped my lips as I heard him gasp for air after the impact.

"I miss you, baby!" I pulled away a little and gave him pecks of kisses all over. I heard the boys laughing at my action.

They just arrive from their tour and the boys came straight from the airport.

"You're seriously not going to dance that in front of so many people, are you?" Haiden pouted as he guided me towards the corner where the chairs are.

"Why? Is it that ugly?" I whined and we heard Vash laughing.

"It wasn't, Lisa. But I'm pretty sure that's going to cost both of you a lot of trouble. Who made those steps by the way?" he laughed and Haiden glared at him.

"I did," I said, very proud.

I've been choreographing a lot of dance and some groups are using my choreography for their songs. I couldn't get any prouder.

Haiden groaned and I smiled at him sweetly.

"Can't you like, remove that part where you were pouncing the goddamn floor, ge'ez Lisa," I laughed even more at his reaction.

"I don't like where this conversation is heading, let me go and find my girl instead," Yohan waved us a goodbye and in no time, the rest of the boys followed.

Rome had to pull Vash by the ear to keep him from staying. As always, that ever so adorable guy.

I heard he's in some relationship with someone from Red Velvet though.

He lifted me from my seat and have me sitting on his lap instead, my arms wrapped around his neck.

"Baby, that fucking dance will be the death of me. It's getting me turned on," he whined and I smiled cheekily.

"You are?" I teased and I started tracing every feature of his beautiful face to my satisfaction.

"Ge'ez, Lisa. I just came back and you're trying to test my patience," I saw him close his eyes and I felt the bulge on his pants getting harder.

"Ooops?" I giggle and he scowled at me.

"How about we go on a date?" he asked and I shrieked out of happiness. It's been months since we last went out and that was just right before they took a flight out of the country.

Sometimes I find it hard that my boyfriend is a goddamn superstar. Not just in Korea but all over the world.

I get people getting jealous of me but I don't give a damn. They can get jealous all they want but I won't give Haiden up.

It's been two years since we started dating and things didn't go all sugar and sweets but it's okay.

I love how our relationship wasn't perfect. But at the end of the day, each of us pulls each other from our rock-bottom states.

"Yeah, let's go out. I miss my baby," he leaned forward and gave me a peck on the lips. A groan escaped my mouth. It was just a peck but I felt my core tightening.

God I fucking miss this sunshine.

I grab the back of his neck and started kissing him deeper. I felt his hands landing on my waist, slowly, his other hand moved slowly cupping my breast along the process.

"Shit, Lisa," he was growling and I shifted through my position until I have him in between my legs.

"Fucking..." he moaned out loud when he felt my tongue meeting his. "Miss this!" I started grinding over him and we were both lost on the sensation before us.

He bit my lower lip and I felt him lower his hand off my chest.

"Damn it, baby. We have CCTV's over here," he whispered in between kisses and I bit his lip harder.

"Fuck, Lisa. Stop or I'll take you here. I don't even care if we have people watching us now," his voice was hoarse and I was fucking ready for him to take me here.

If it wasn't the sound of someone knocking, the two of us wouldn't stop.

"Ah, hyung! I know this is probably not the best time but the security wants you two to know that it's not a scene they wish to see..."

Haiden pulled away from our kiss with our forehead resting alongside. Soft chuckles escaped our lips at what Jason had said.

"Go away Jason..." Haiden teased the younger guy and I raised an eyebrow.

"Hyung, you know it'll be awkward if they ever saw your dick, right?"

The two of us started laughing at what Jason said next.

I pulled him for a hug and he did the same.

"Baby, you make me go crazy..." he whispered on my ear. He then buried his face at the crook of my neck and I have never felt so satisfied in my entire life.

"You do the same to me baby..." I whispered.

"I love you, Lisa. I will never get tired of telling you that," he added and I hummed in response.

I pulled away a little so I can see his face. His expression masked with so many emotion, lust, longing, love.

"I know baby. And I love you all the same. God knows I love you so much more than I did yesterday, the other day, and all those past days. I'm loving you more everyday it's scaring me," I smiled at him and I knew that gave him peace.

Haiden, he has so many fears within him and I will do everything to make him feel that I love him. That he's worth it.

Maybe sending that message was the best decision I made in my life.

And having Haiden beside me, is the best ever gift I can ever hope for.

Because with him, I feel so complete.

---